

# **COMMON LAW: ROOTS AND FRUITS**

**Roots of Common Law in Biblical, Iro-Scotic, Brythonic & English  
Jurisprudence – and Some of their Fruits in Great Britain, the United States,  
and Australia**

**by**

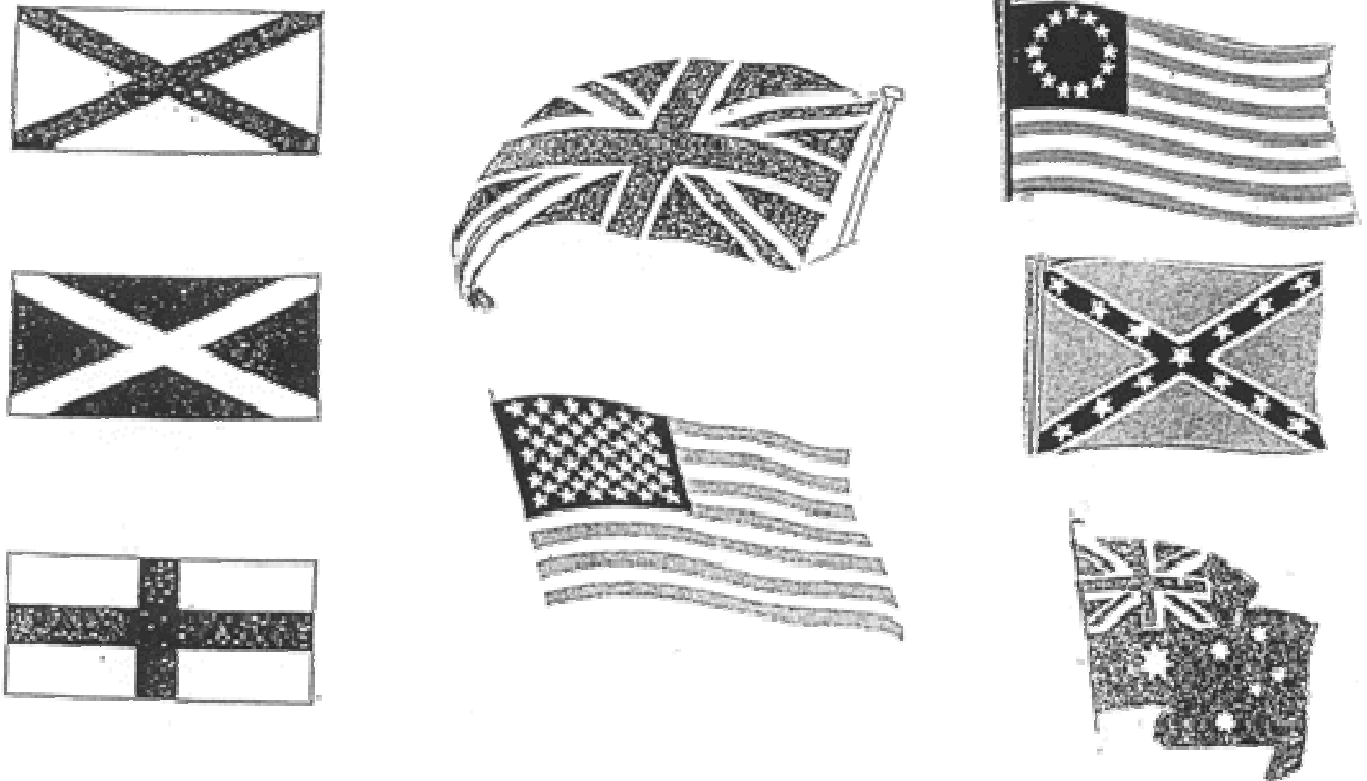
**Rev. Prof. Dr. Adv.  
FRANCIS NIGEL LEE**

**Revised edition**

**1997 & 2000**



## COMMON LAW: ROOTS AND FRUITS



‘In the very morning of the Gospel, the Sun of righteousness shone upon this land; and they say the first potentate on the Earth that owned it, was in Britain. *Nicophorus II:40*, and the *Epistle of Eleutherius to Lucius*....

‘Oh, that we could remember the days of old! ... God will again water His garden, once more purge His vineyard – once more of His own accord He will take England upon liking.... The reformation of England shall be more glorious than of any nation in the World, being carried on neither by might nor power but only by the Spirit of the Lord of hosts. \_

Rev. Dr. John Owen: *Sermon to the British Parliament*, 29th April 1646



**Roots of Common Law in Biblical, Iro-Scotic,  
Brythonic & English Jurisprudence – and Some  
of their Fruits in Great Britain, the United  
States, and Australia**

Doctoral dissertation  
(approximately one million words)  
submitted in partial fulfilment of the requirements  
for the degree of  
**Doctor of Common Law (D.C.L.)**

by  
Francis Nigel Lee  
B.A., Dip.Th., C.Litt., L.Th., B.D., LL.B., M.A., M.A.T.S., M.Th., M.Soc.Sc.,  
M.Div., LL.D., D.Litt., D.Jur., D.Min., D.R.E., S.T.D, Ed.D., Th.D., Ph.D.

at the

Samuel Rutherford School of Law  
Florida, U.S.A.

Vastly expanded from lectures given in June 1985  
at the Dallas Conference on Christian Government (Texas, U.S.A.)

by  
Rev. Professor Dr. Adv. Francis Nigel Lee

Trial Lawyer and Barrister-at-Law of the Supreme Court of South Africa

and

Caldwell-Morrow Lecturer in Church History  
in the Queensland Presbyterian Theological Seminary,  
Emmanuel College, University of Queensland,  
Brisbane, Australia

1993

(revised 1997 and 2000)



## BLACKSTONE ON THE ROOTS OF ANCIENT BRITISH COMMON LAW

“The antient collection of unwritten maxims and customs which is called the Common Law...had subsisted immemorially in this kingdom.... It was then taught, says Mr. Selden (*in Fletam* 7.7), in the monasteries.... The clergy in particular...then engrossed almost every other branch of learning. So (like their predecessors the British druids) they were peculiarly remarkable for their proficiency in the study of the law. *Nullus clericus nisi causidicus* [No cleric unless a lawyer], is the character given of them soon after the Conquest, by William of Malmesbury (*Laws of the Kings* 1.4). The judges therefore were usually created out of the sacred order....

“An academic expounder of the laws...should be engaged...in tracing out the originals and as it were the elements of the law.... These originals should be traced to their fountains..., to the customs of the Britons and Germans as recorded by Caesar [B.C. 58f] and Tacitus [A.D. 98f]; to the codes of the northern nations on the Continent, and more especially to those of our own Saxon princes [449f A.D.]...; but above all to that inexhaustible reservoir of legal antiquities...entitled...the Law of Nations...weighed and compared with the precepts of the Law of Nature....

“The British as well as the Gallic druids committed all their laws as well as learning to memory; and it is [also] said of the primitive Saxons here, as well as their brethren on the Continent.... Our antient lawyers and particularly Fortescue (*c.* 17) insist with abundance of warmth that these customs are as old as the primitive Britons, and continued down through the several mutations of government and inhabitants to the present time unchanged and unadulterated.... Our antiquarians and first historians do all positively assure us that...in the time of Alfred [A.D. 887f]...he found it expedient to compile his *Dome-Book*...for the general use of the whole kingdom.... It contained...the principal maxims of the Common Law [*Folcruhte* alias :Folk-rule].... The first ground and chief cornerstone of the laws of England...is general immemorial custom or Common Law....

“Sir Edward Coke...supposed the Common Law of England [alias Britain] and Scot-land [alias Scot-ic Ireland]...to have been originally the same...Old Common Law of both kingdoms.... God, when He created matter and endued it with a principle of mobility, established certain rules for the perpetual direction of that motion – so, when He created man and endued him with free-will to conduct himself in all parts of life, He laid down certain immutable laws of human nature whereby that free-will is in some degree regulated and restrained, and gave him also the faculty of reason to discover the purport of those laws. \_

– Sir William Blackstone: *Commentaries on the Laws of England*, I:17-95.





**PART I**  
**PROLEGOMENA TO THE COMMON LAW**



## B.C. ROOTS AND A.D. FRUITS OF BRITISH COMMON LAW

ˆDunwallo Molmutius arose [around 510 B.C.]... Excelling all the kings of Britain in comeliness and courage, he...fashioned for himself a crown of gold.... This king established among the Britons the laws that were called the Molmutine Laws ˆ which even today are celebrated amongst the English.... He ordained that the temples of God and the cities should enjoy such privileges as that, in case any runaway or guilty man should take refuge therein ˆ he should depart thence [*cf.* Numbers chapter 35].... Moreover, he ordained that the roads...should be held inviolable.... In his days, the knife of the cut-throat was blunted ˆ and the cruelties of the robber ceased in the land.... After Dunwallo's death, his son Belin [from around B.C. 455]...was the undisputed master of the Island ˆ from sea to sea. He confirmed the Laws which his father had ordained, and commanded that even and steadfast justice should be done throughout the realm. Especially careful was he to proclaim that the cities and the highways...should have the same place that Dunwallo had established.... He dedicated them with all honour and dignity, and proclaimed it as of his Common Law that condign punishment should be inflicted on any that do violence.... If any would know all of his ordinances concerning them ˆ let him read the Molmutine Laws that Gildas the Historian [520 A..D.] did translate out of the British into Latin, and [the 871 A.D.] King Alfred out of Latin into the English tongue!\_

ˆ Geoffrey Arthur: *History of Britain's Kings*, II:17 - III:5 (A.D. 1138)

ˆA conference between the King [John] and the Barons was appointed.... The King...granted the charter required of him (June 15, 1215).... *Magna Carta* or the Great Charter...secured very important liberties and privileges to every order of men in the kingdom ˆ to the clergy, to the barons, and to the people.... John seemed to submit passively; but he only dissembled.... He secretly sent abroad emissaries to enlist foreign soldiers; and he despatched a messenger to Rome in order to lay before the Pope [Innocent III] the Great Charter.... Innocent ˆ considering himself as feudal lord of the kingdom ˆ was incensed at the temerity of the barons. He issued a bull, in which he annulled the charter.... As early at least as the reign of Henry III [A.D. 1216-72], the legal equality of all freemen below the rank of the peerage appears to have been completely established. The civil rights of individuals were protected by that venerable body of ancient customs which, under the name of the Common Law, still obtains in our courts of justice. Its origin is lost in the obscurity of remote antiquity. \_

ˆ Prof. J.S. Brewer: *The Student's Hume*, III:7:8 & III:12:14 (1883 A.D.)

ˆThis Constitution...shall be the supreme law of the land.... Done in Convention by the unanimous consent of the States present, the 17th day of September **in the year of our Lord** 1787.... In suits at Common Law..., the right of trial by jury shall be preserved; and no fact tried by a jury shall be otherwise re-examined in any Court of the United States, than according to the rules of the Common Law. \_

ˆ *U.S. Constitution*: Articles VI & VII and the 7th Amendment (1787f A.D.)



## APOSTOLIC AGE BRITISH CHRISTIANITY

Isaiah 42:4. :And the isles shall wait for His law. This and such prophecies of the gospelizing of islands [cf. too 49:1-12 with Genesis 9:27 & 10:2-5], I believe to have...the **conversion**...principally aimed at in these prophecies.... They have a glorious accomplishment in the gospelizing the isles of **Britain** and **Ireland**, and making of them so glorious a part of the Church...**soon after** Christ's ascension. \_

^ Dr. Jonathan Edwards: *Apocalyptic Writings* (1739), Yale Univ., 1977, p. 142.

From a passage in an Epistle to Clemens Romanus [around 95 A.D.], the chief missionary apostle [Paul] has been set down as the **Apostle of Britain**. Clement represents Paul as :coming to the extremest limit of the West... The **progress of Christianity** was co-extensive **for four centuries**; before the flood of Saxon heathendom...checked...for a time...the light of the Gospel in England south of the Humber....

We may say that **our Celtic predecessors** or forefathers were converted to Christ.... The **apostolic origin of the Church**..., whether from St. John's immediate disciples or from Paul himself or both, is seen in its purer doctrine and freedom ^ and in the time of its celebration of Easter when it [around 600f A.D.] came into conflict with the papal church....

**Gildas** the Wise [around 520 A.D.]..., in his *History and Epistle*, on the subject of the **introduction of Christianity into the island of Great Britain**..., [declared]: :**Christ** the true Sun afforded His rays, *i.e.* His precepts, **to this island**...during the **latter** part of the reign of Tiberias Caesar ^ [14-37 A.D.]....

The *Welsh Triads* tell how Cunobelin(us) [alias the A.D. 15f Cymbeline], the father of Caratacos [alias Caractacus or **Caradoc**], was kept seven years as a hostage at Rome [A.D. 52-59].... He returned, as a **missionary** to his **countrymen**.... The highest authority on the subject (Rev. F. Thackeray) observes of the **family** and other captives who accompanied Caratacos himself, that **Paul** during his first imprisonment may have become **acquainted** with some of these, :and that through their representations he might have been induced, when liberated from his confinement, to undertake a voyage to **Britain** ^....

**Chrysostom** [around 400 A.D.] writes of continued missionary extension: :If you were to go unto...**the British Isles**...you would hear **all** men everywhere **discoursing** matters out of the **Scripture**. ^ Referring back to this time, and also to much earlier times, the Briton **Gildas** thus describes the constitution of the British Church: :**The Church is spread over the nation**; organized; endowed...; embracing the people of all ranks and classes. **It had spread, moreover, into Ireland and Scotland**. It was also a learned Church. It had its **own** version of the **Bible**, and its own ritual. ^ \_

^ Dr. George Smith, LL.D.: *Short History of Christian Missions*, 1886, pp. 59f.



## PREFACE

Scripture teaches that `the Triune God made man upright.... Whatever your hand finds to do ` do it with all your might.... A wise man`s heart is at his right hand [on the right wing]...; but a fool`s heart at his left [on the left wing].... Fear God and keep His Commandments; for this is the whole duty of man. For God shall bring every work into judgment together with every secret thing ` whether it be good, or whether it be evil. \_ Ecclesiastes 7:29; 9:10; 10:2; 12:13f.

The Lord`s creation covenant and its dominion mandate were given not just to our first parents, but in them also to all mankind as their descendants. To them, `the Triune God said: :Be fruitful and multiply and fill the Earth and subdue it!` \_ But men `like Adam, have transgressed the covenant; they have dealt treacherously. \_ Henceforth, `whosoever sheds human blood, by men shall his blood be shed. For God made man in His image. \_ Genesis 1:28; Hosea 6:7; Genesis 9:1-7.

`The sons of Noah who went forth from the ark, were Shem, Ham and Japheth.... God shall enlarge Japheth, and he shall dwell in the tents of Shem.... The sons of Japheth:] Gomer and Magog.... By these were the Isles...according to their languages. \_ Genesis 9:18-27 & 10:1-5.

`The Isles shall wait for His Law.... Sing to the Lord from the end of the Earth, you that go down to the sea.... Let them give glory to the Lord, and declare His praise in the Islands.... He will magnify the Law.... Let all the nations be gathered together, and...show us the former things.... Listen, O Isles, to Me.... Hearken, you people from afar.... Behold, these shall come ` from the North and from the West. ` \_ Isaiah 42:4-21; 43:9; 49:1-12.

\* \* \* \* \*

What nations descended from the above-mentioned Gomer and Magog? Which are the above-mentioned `Islands\_ to `the North\_ and to `the West\_ of Palestine where these words were written? According to many, Gomer was the ancestor of the Brythons ` and Magog the ancestor of the Iro-Scots.

Hear America`s greatest theologian of all time, Rev. Professor Dr. Jonathan Edwards Sr. In his *Apocalyptic Writings* and his *Interleaved Bible*, Edwards insists that `by :Isles` is meant particularly Europe.... The conversion of that, is principally aimed at in these prophecies.... They have a glorious accomplishment in the gospelizing of the Isles of Britain and Ireland, and making of them so glorious a part of the Church. \_

The famous Puritan and Elizabethan chronicler Raphael Holinshed (d. *circa* 1580) wrote a massive six-volume set of *Chronicles of England, Scotland and Ireland* ` from Noah`s Flood till the end of the Sixteenth Century A.D.

Holinshed`s *Chronicles* comprise about three-and-a-half million words. In compiling it, he first consulted about two hundred histories of the Ancient World in general and of the Ancient British Isles in particular.

Holinshed (and his sources) constitute one of the chief theoretical bases for this present Doctorate of ours in Common Law (D.C.L.). Elsewhere we have produced a contemporary abridgement of Holinshed, as our own D.Litt. dissertation, and would here refer to it.

\* \* \* \* \*

When were the Bible's afore-mentioned predictions fulfilled – anent the expansion of the Japhethitic Gomer and Magog, and anent the blessed Northwestern Isles which Edwards identifies with Britain and the Emerald Isle (together to be referred to as the British Isles alias the Western Isles)? The principal fulfilment first started to occur soon after Christ's incarnation – through missionary work, in the course of the history of the early church.

Observed the prophet Daniel: 'A Stone...smote the [Roman] image upon its feet of iron and clay, and broke them into pieces.... And the Stone which smote the image became a great Mountain, and filled the whole Earth.... The God of Heaven set up a Kingdom which shall never be destroyed.... It shall break the other governments into pieces, and consume them; but It shall stand for ever.... This shall come to pass.... It is certain. \_ Daniel 2:34-35,44-45.

Thereupon 'I blessed the Most High, \_ added Daniel, 'and I praised and honoured Him Who lives for ever, Whose dominion is an everlasting dominion and Whose Kingdom is from generation to generation. But all the inhabitants of the Earth are reputed as nothing. Now He does according to His will – in the army of Heaven, and among the inhabitants of the Earth. Thus, none can stay His hand or say to Him, :What are You doing?~ \_ Daniel 4:34-35.

Then, in a vision, Daniel foresaw how 'the Son of man comes with the clouds of Heaven. \_ Here, the prophet had a vision not of Christ's still-future *parousia* from the Father back to our Earth – but a vision of Christ's now-accomplished ascension from the Earth and back 'to the Ancient of days. \_ Thus Calvin.

At that time, namely at the Son of man's ascension, 'they brought Him before Him\_ – viz. before the Ancient of days. 'Then there was given unto Him [the Son]: dominion, and glory, and a Kingdom – so that all people and nations and languages should serve Him.

'His Kingdom is an everlasting Kingdom, which shall not pass away. And His Kingdom...shall not be destroyed.... And the government and dominion and the greatness of the government under the whole Heaven shall be given to the people of the saints of the Most High Whose Kingdom is an everlasting Kingdom.... All dominions shall serve and obey Him. \_ Daniel 7:13-14,27.

\* \* \* \* \*

The fulfilment of the above, then, started commencing at Christ's ascension. For it was then that the apostles received the Great Commission alias the Missionary Mandate from Jesus Himself. 'They asked Him, saying: :Lord, do You at this time wish again to give back the rule to Israel?~ Then He answered them: :It is not for you



## PREFACE

to know.... But you shall be witnesses to Me ~ both in Jerusalem, and in all Judea, and in Samaria, and to the uttermost part of the Earth!~

~Then, when He had spoken these things, while they beheld, He was taken up; and a cloud received Him out of their sight. And, while they kept looking stedfastly toward Heaven as He went up ~ behold, two men in white apparel stood by them. They [the two men] said: ~You men of Galilee! Why do you keep on standing, gazing up into Heaven? This same Jesus, Who has been taken up from you into Heaven ~ shall so come, in like manner, as you have seen Him go into Heaven!~

~Then they returned to Jerusalem.... And when the day of Pentecost was fully come..., they were all filled with the Holy Ghost and began to...speak...the wonderful works of God.\_ Acts 1:6-12 & 2:1,4,11.

One of them in particular ~ the apostle John ~ was given an indepth understanding of all this. Even many decades later, he exulted: ~Great and marvellous are Your works, Lord God Almighty! Righteous and true are Your ways, You King of saints [or ~nations~]! Who shall not fear You, O Lord, and glorify Your Name? For You alone are holy.... All nations shall come and worship before You.\_ Revelation 15:4.

This would and will occur, as a result of the comprehensive execution of the Missionary Mandate. For Christ shall have dominion ~ precisely through His Church's obedient and successful execution of His Great Commission. Psalm 72 *cf.* Matthew 28:19.

\* \* \* \* \*

Now in Britain, after the transmission of the Mosaic Law from around B.C. 1400 onward, King Brut the migrant Trojan built the city of ~New Troy~ ~ around B.C. 1150. There, from B.C. 510 onward, the British King Dunvall Moelmud proclaimed God's Moral Law (and its judicial applications) to be the **Common Law** of the land. From B.C. 75 onward, New Troy~ (or ~Troy Novant~ of the *Trinovantes*) was expanded (and renamed London) by the energetic King Lludd who died just before the Roman tyrant Julius Caesar was twice repelled by the Britons.

In that same London, the city of Westminster later arose. There, almost every king ~ also from the A.D. 1066 William the Conqueror onward ~ was crowned over the Stone of Scone. Upon that stone also the earlier Iro-Scotic kings had been crowned ~ in Scotland; and, yet more anciently, also in Ireland. The article ~Westminster~ in the 1929 American edition of the *Encyclopaedia Britannica* states that the stone is of [Iro]Scotic origin ~ and that tradition identifies it with Jacob's pillow at Bethel. Genesis 28:10-22.

The constitutional milestone of *Magna Carta* re-asserted Britain's ancient liberties ~ in A.D. 1215. Then, in the three thirteenth-century statutes of Westminster ~ important legislative promulgations were made by King Edward the First, in Parliament.

The first statute, that called *Westminster I* (A.D. 1275), practically constituted a code of law ~ incorporating much unwritten law into the written code. The second statute, *Westminster II* (1285), promoted judicial reforms and streamlined English

landholding. The third statute, *Westminster III* (1290), stopped the process of subinfeudation.

From A.D. 1360 onward one sees the great political and theological work of the famous Proto-Protestant British Pre-Reformer John Wycliffe (*cf.* Daniel 12:11f). Then, in 1536, Calvin produced his epoch-making *Institutes of the Christian Religion*. In that very same year, the Welsh-British King Henry Tudor VIII swiftly effected Union between England and Wales.

In 1628, the English *Petition of Right* pointedly invoked also *Magna Carta* against King Charles. Then, in April 1642, the Westminster Assembly – to which also three Colonial Americans were invited – was ordained by the English Parliament.

Its purpose was to help promote a common reformation in Scotland, England and Ireland – **before** the tragic outbreak of the English Civil War in August 1642. The Westminster Assembly aimed at such a reformation especially through the international 1643 *Solemn League and Covenant* – and also through the 1645 *Westminster Form of Government*.

That Assembly also produced the *Westminster Confession of Faith*, by 1646. This recognizes, *inter alia*: the Light of Nature; the Necessity of Scripture; the Triune God; Creation; Divine Providence; the Covenant and Law of God; Christian Liberty; Oaths; the Civil Magistrate; Marriage; Property; and Councils to advise Governments. See chs. I-VII; XIX-XXVI; and XXX-XXXI.

The Westminster Assembly also produced the *Larger Catechism*. That embraces a massive exposition of the Law of God, including its political implications. It further stresses the certainty of its ultimate triumph – even internationally. See QQ. 39-45; 51-54; 91-151; and 191-196.

\* \* \* \* \*

Now it was this so-called ‘Westminster System of Government’ – which was taken over in North America, by the Cambridge Synod in Massachusetts from 1646 onward. Later, Westminster triumphed not only throughout England from Westmorland to Cornwall at the ‘Glorious Revolution’ and the Protestant Settlement of 1688, and at the *Declaration of Rights* alias the British *Bill of Rights* of 1689. It triumphed also in Colonial America – from its Westmoreland County in Virginia to New England’s Boston and beyond, during the hectic seventeenth and eighteenth centuries.

Thus Francis Lightfoot Lee, of Westmoreland County in Virginia, signed the *Westmoreland Declaration* against the 1765 British *Stamp Act*. That Act (of the British Parliament in London) proposed to levy taxes upon various American colonial documents (such as upon all newspapers, advertisements and legal documents *etc.*). However, such American taxes should not have been levied by British Representatives of British Constituencies assembled in Britain – but only by Representatives of the American Colonies, and indeed only when assembled precisely in their own existing Colonial Parliaments in America.

Francis Lightfoot Lee of Virginia’s Westmoreland County objected to the British *Stamp Act*. So too did the official Delegates from the various American Colonial

PREFACE

Assemblies. Meeting in Congress (at New York) to protest against the application of Britain's new statute against the English Colonists in America, they pointed out that those "Englishmen" living in the American "Colonies are entitled to all the inherent rights and privileges" of those other Englishmen born "within the kingdom of Great Britain."

The Delegates of the American Colonies had assembled rightly, in accordance with the laws enabling this "laws which had been enacted, many decades earlier, precisely in England. They themselves had never had seats in England's Parliament, which met in London. Yet, even while meeting as a Congress in America, they still regarded themselves as "Englishmen."

Indeed, they clearly explained: "It is inseparably essential to the freedom of a people, and the undoubted right of Englishmen, that no taxes be imposed on them but with their own consent" "given personally, or by their Representatives.... The people of these Colonies are not" "and, from their local circumstances, cannot be" "represented in the House of Commons in Great Britain.... The only Representatives of the people of these Colonies, are persons chosen therein by themselves.... No taxes ever have been, or can be, constitutionally imposed on them" "but by their respective Legislatures."

Continued the American objection: "It is unreasonable and inconsistent with the principles and spirit of the British Constitution for the people of Great Britain [through their Parliament in London] to grant to his majesty [the King of England] the property of the Colonists [in North America].... The late English [Stamp] Acts..., by imposing taxes on the inhabitants of these Colonies...[and] by extending the jurisdiction of the Courts of Admiralty beyond its ancient limits, have a manifest tendency to subvert the rights and liberties of the Colonists...."

"It is the indispensable duty of these Colonies" "to the best of sovereigns, to the mother country, and to themselves" "to endeavor, by a loyal and dutiful address to his majesty [the King of England], and humble applications to both Houses of Parliament, to procure the repeal of the Act for granting and applying certain stamp duties...and of the other late Acts for the restriction of American commerce."

Yet neither his majesty the King of England nor the British Houses of Parliament timeously heeded this earnest petition. It was ignored, even though regularly forwarded by the official Delegates from nine of the (then thirteen) American Colonial Assemblies previously set up by Britain herself. Those were Representative Parliaments of such Englishmen and other citizens of Great Britain who had been born in America or who were residing there.

Yet the British Parliament further aggravated the tense situation by legislating the *Tea Act* in 1773. Tea sales in America consequently ceased in New York, Philadelphia, and Charleston. Indeed, in Massachusetts "discontent exploded at the "Boston Tea Party."

\* \* \* \* \*

On June 7th 1776, matters were taken further by Francis Lightfoot Lee's brother. We mean the Representative from Virginia, Richard Henry Lee, who had been

educated in Britain. In the Continental Congress of the thirteen United States of America, he moved the resolution `that these united Colonies are, and of right ought to be, free and independent States; that all political connection between them and the State of Great Britain is, and ought to be, totally dissolved...; [and] that a plan of confederation be prepared, and transmitted to the respective Colonies for their consideration.\_ Compare with this the `confederacies` mentioned at: Genesis 14:13; Psalm 83:5-8; Isaiah 7:2 & 8:12; and Obadiah 7.

Francis Lightfoot Lee and his brother Richard Henry Lee were both among the fifty-six who, as Representatives of the various Colonial Legislatures, co-signed the famous U.S. *Declaration of Independence* in 1776. Indeed, their cousin's son, General Henry Lee (or `Light Horse Harry\_) - himself too a Representative at the Confederation Congress - became Washington's right-hand man in the American `War of Independence` from Britain.

\* \* \* \* \*

General Henry Lee later became Governor of Virginia. Several decades later, his son - Gen. Robert E. Lee - declined President Abraham Lincoln's amazing invitation for Lee the Southerner (unconstitutionally and illegally) to lead the northern armies in their aggression against the confederated States of the South.

Instead, Lee became first an Officer and later the General-in-Chief under the thirteen-star flag of the armies of the Confederate States of America. Those thirteen stars symbolized the same basis of confederation as that of the original thirteen States in the 1777-87 Union.

The 1861 Confederacy was thus an attempt to maintain the traditional independence of the States. Yet now no longer so much against England, but rather against the tyranny which had recently taken control even of the U.S. Federal Government. For Lee saw it as his duty to defend his own native Westmoreland County in Virginia - during the War of Northern Aggression against the self-governing Christian States of the American Southland.

We must now let the great Southern Presbyterian theologian Rev. Professor Dr. Robert L. Dabney eloquently tell the next part of the sordid story. Says he (in the fifth chapter of his famous book *The Life of General Stonewall Jackson*): `History will some day place the position of these Confederate States...in the clearest light of her glory. The cause they undertook to defend, was that of regulated, constitutional liberty - and of fidelity to law and covenants - against the licentious violence of physical power. The assumptions they resisted - were precisely those of that radical democracy which deluged Europe with blood at the close of the eighteenth century [*viz.* the French Revolution], and which shook its thrones again in the [Communist] convulsions of 1848.\_

Continues Dabney: `This power, which the old States of Europe expended such rivers of treasure and blood to curb [after the 1789 French Revolution] - at the beginning of the [nineteenth] century had transferred its immediate designs across the Atlantic..., consolidating itself anew in the Northern States of America.... Hither, by emigration, flowed the radicalism, discontent, crime, and poverty of Europe - until the people of the Northern States became, like the rabble of Imperial Rome, the

## PREFACE

*colluvies gentium* [alias :the excrement of the pagans']. The miseries and vices of their early homes had alike taught them to mistake license for liberty.... They were incapable of comprehending, much more of loving, the enlightened structure of English or Virginian freedom. \_

Dabney goes on: `The first step in their vast designs, was to overwhelm the Confederate States of the South. This done, they boasted that they would proceed - first, to engross the whole of the American Continent; and then to emancipate Ireland, to turn Great Britain into a democracy, to enthrone Red Republicanism in France, and to give the crowns of Germany to the pantheistic humanitarians of that race.... This in truth was the monster whose terrific [or terrifying] pathway among the nations, the Confederate States undertook to obstruct - in behalf not only of their own children, but of all the children of men. \_

Concludes Dabney: `To fight this battle, eleven millions [of Southerners], of whom four millions were the poor Africans..., prepared to meet twenty millions [of Northerners].... Our country has to wage this strife only on these cruel terms.... The blood of her chivalrous sons shall be matched - against the sordid streams of this *cloaca populorum* [alias this :sewer of mobs']! \_

Finally, the South was defeated in 1865 - outnumbered by more than three to one by the overwhelming hordes from the North. Yet, looking back, the Southern military leader Robert E. Lee rightly observed even in 1869: `I could take no other course without dishonor. And if it were all to be gone over again, I should act in precisely the same manner. \_

\* \* \* \* \*

The same would also be said by a contemporary Northerner - Rev. Dr. Carl McIntire (D.D., LL.D.). In his famous 1963 book *Author of Liberty* - he too speaks about the Christian roots of the *U.S. Constitution*, for the maintenance of which General Lee too had himself so very valiantly fought.

Explains Dr. McIntire: `The two entrances of the magnificent building in which the Supreme Court of the United States is housed in Washington D.C., have engraved in marble above them the words :Equal Justice Under Law' .... The concept that put them there, was in the heart of the men who framed the *Constitution of the United States*. They obtained that concept originally from God Himself.

`The Law of God is as permanent as God Himself. The Law of God is an expression of God's own nature.... The charter of freedom for the human race, is the Law of the Almighty God. This we call the Moral Law.... When Adam and Eve, our first parents, were made - God placed His Law in their hearts, and they knew His will naturally.... This Law He also gave to us in the tables of stone on Mt. Sinai by the hands of Moses the great lawgiver. The Moral Law is summarized in the Ten Commandments. We find it embodied, too, in flesh and blood - in the person of the Lord Jesus Christ.

`The Sermon on the Mount is nothing more than a definition and a clarifying of the demands of God's Law. This Moral Law has been the same in every age, and it will always be the same. It is the declaration of the will of God to mankind - all mankind:

bond and free; saved and lost; every creature that God has made - directing and binding everyone to personal, perfect, and perpetual conformity and obedience to its demands. \_

\* \* \* \* \*

Dr. McIntire continues: `The State is related directly and in the most specific manner to the Ten Commandments. The State has no right or authority to encroach upon the liberties of the individual which God guarantees under His Law. The State, in other words, must respect and honor the Law of God.... Only in honoring and maintaining this Law, can it serve its true function and be truly free.

`Murder is an offense, according to the law of the land. When it is committed, men are tried and condemned.... Adultery is a crime against the State; fornication likewise.... The property rights of individuals and corporations...are based upon the command of God's Law :thou shalt not steal`.... The right of a man to teach and train his own child, is guaranteed by the laws of the land. And these statutes relate to the Fifth Commandment.

`In administering the affairs of men, the State must be guided by the laws that God has made for man. Thus the State literally becomes a servant of God, and this is exactly what is taught in the Bible [Romans 13:4].... :Caesar` has certain God-given powers, and in the exercise of these he must render an account to God. Thus the State is bound just as much by God in its responsibility to Him, as the individual is bound. Representatives, Senators, Governors, Judges, the President - all Public Officials - should know this and acknowledge it. This is all involved, when the Oath of Office is taken - with the hand on the Bible. \_

\* \* \* \* \*

Dr. McIntire goes on: `The Communist State ignores, in the social relations of men, all that God has taught concerning the rights of property. It destroys these rights; gives us a community of property, or Communism; and turns away from God's Law to enforce its own self-made standards....

The Author of liberty was the First to tell mankind of the beastly State [Revelation 13:1f].... He actually called it :the beast`.... The ideology of Communism today...[and] the system of [socialistic] thought involved in modernism preached in many so-called Christian churches today, is not Christianity at all. It is another religion entirely. \_

Dr. McIntire ends - by quoting the `beloved hymn from which we have taken our title *Author of Liberty*:

My country, 'tis of thee, sweet land of liberty, of thee I sing.  
Land where my fathers died, land of the Pilgrim's pride -  
from every mountain side, let freedom ring!

Our fathers' God, to Thee, Author of liberty - to Thee we sing.  
Long may our land be bright, with freedom's holy light,  
Protect us by Thy might, great God our King! \_

\* \* \* \* \*

## PREFACE

It is significant that the above American hymn shares the same tune as the British National Anthem: *God save our gracious King [or Queen]*. It is also significant that just after the beginning of this Preface, we referred to the great Elizabethan historian Raphael Holinshed. It is therefore appropriate that, toward the end of this Preface, we give a quotation from another great Elizabethan Queen Elizabeth II.

In her 1993 Christmas Message – largely ignored by our planet’s secularistic news media – her Majesty declared: ‘We have become a global village.... Switch on the radio or television, and the graphic details of distant events are instantly available to us....’

‘Not all the pictures bring gloomy news.... The more we know, the more we feel responsible, and the more we want to help.... All of us owe a debt....’

‘I am always moved by those words in St. John’s Gospel which we hear on Christmas Day: ‘He was in the world, and the world was made by Him, and the world knew Him not.’ We have only to listen to the news, to know the truth of that. But the Gospel goes on: ‘But as many as received Him, to them gave He power to become the sons of God.’

‘For all the inhumanity around us, let us be grateful for those who have received Him and who go about quietly doing their work and His will.... They know that there is an eternal truth of much greater significance than our own triumphs and tragedies, and it is embodied by the Child in the manger. That is their message of hope.

‘We can all try to reflect that message of hope in our own lives, in our actions and in our prayers. If we do, the reflection may light the way for others and help them to read the message too.... May 1994 bring to those brave people who...go about their lawful lives undaunted, the reward they deserve.’

\* \* \* \* \*

This will yet be realized also in Australia. As the American Rev. Professor Dr. Jonathan Edwards Sr. remarkably predicted around 1735: ‘What advantage has it been to America that the Mediterranean Sea opens from them to us; or what advantage has *Hollandia Nova* [alias Australia] or *Terra Australis Incognita* [alias Australasia], from the Indian Ocean’s reaching from them even to this land? Wherefore, we do believe that the most glorious part of the Church will hereafter be there, at the centre of the Kingdom of Christ, communicating influences to all other parts....’

‘What is peculiarly glorious...is gospelizing the new and before unknown world...where the devil had reigned...from the beginning of the world.’ That before-unknown world takes in ‘America, *Terra Australis Incognita* [or Australasia], *Hollandia Nova* [alias Australia], and all those yet undiscovered tracts of land....’

‘There must be an amazing and unparalleled progress of the world, and manifestation of divine power – to bring so much to pass by the year 2000.... The whole heathen world should be enlightened and converted to the Christian faith throughout all parts of Africa, Asia, America and *Terra Australis* – and be thoroughly settled in Christian faith and order.’

*COMMON LAW: ROOTS AND FRUITS*

Thus Dr. Jonathan Edwards, Francis Lightfoot Lee, Richard Henry Lee, General Robert E. Lee, Robert L. Dabney, Dr. Carl McIntire, and Queen Elizabeth II. May the lives of such Christians inspire us all even today - as we too, on the basis of *The Roots and Fruits of the Common Law*, seek God and good government everywhere.

(Rev. Professor Dr. Adv.) Francis Nigel Lee,  
Barrister-at-law of the Supreme Court of South Africa,  
Professor of Theology and Caldwell-Morrow Lecturer in Church History,  
Queensland Presbyterian Theological Seminary,  
Brisbane, Australia, 1993



# TABLE OF CONTENTS

Title Page.....	i
Blackstone on the Roots of Ancient British Common Law .....	iii
<b>PART I – PROLEGOMENA TO THE COMMON LAW</b>	
B.C. Roots and A.D. Fruits of British Common Law .....	vii
Apostolic Age British Christianity.....	ix
Preface .....	xi
Table of Contents .....	xxi
Detail Table of Contents .....	xxvii
Foreword .....	1
Introduction .....	7
Chronological Development of Common Law .....	17
Maps of Major Places Mentioned in the Dissertation.....	47
<b>PART II – THE BIBLICAL AND HISTORICAL BACKGROUND OF THE COMMON LAW</b>	
Ch. 1 The Roots of Law and of Legal Rights.....	85
Ch. 2 The Biblical Data concerning the Common Law .....	147
Ch. 3 Christocracy before Constantine: Christ’s Law Withstood! .....	217
Ch. 4 Christocracy after Constantine: Christ’s Law Recognized!.....	279
<b>PART III – THE DEVELOPMENT OF COMMON LAW IN PRE-CHRISTIAN BRITAIN</b>	
Ch. 5 Common Law among the very Ancient Migrants to the British Isles .....	343
Ch. 6 Common Law among the Ancient Irish after B.C. 2600 .....	381
Ch. 7 Common Law in Britain from B.C. 1800 till B.C. 1000 .....	439
Ch. 8 Common Law in Britain and Eurasia from 1000 to 100 B.C.....	505
Ch. 9 British Common Law during the First Century B.C.....	575
<b>PART IV – CHRISTIAN BRITISH LAW BEFORE THE ANGLO-SAXON INVASION</b>	
Ch. 10 Britain Evangelized by Judean Christians from 35f A.D.....	637
Ch. 11 Britons, Christianizing, resist the Pagan Romans (A.D. 43-87f).....	711
Ch. 12 The growth of British Christianity from A.D. 43 till 100 .....	773
Ch. 13 Britain becomes Christian in the Second Century A.D. ....	835
Ch. 14 Christian Britain, 200-320 A.D., overthrows Rome’s Paganism .....	879
Ch. 15 British Common Law from Constantine to Saint Patrick .....	927
<b>PART V – THE BRITISH CELTS CHRISTIANIZE ANGLO-SAXON COMMON LAW</b>	
Ch. 16 Rome Withdraws from and the Early Anglo-Saxons Arrive in Britain.....	1005
Ch. 17 Christian Britain survives A.D. 429-500 Non-Christian Saxon Attacks .....	1051
Ch. 18 Sixth-century Christian Britain from King Arthur to Rome’s Austin .....	1095
Ch. 19 The Christianization of Southeast England from Kent to Wight .....	1153
Ch. 20 The Northern Anglo-Saxons christianized in Northumbria and Mercia.....	1189
Ch. 21 Wessex the Embryo of Christian England’s United Kingdom.....	1249

<b>PART VI – BRITISH COMMON LAW: FROM ALFRED TO THE REFORMATION</b>	
Ch. 22	England’s ‘Good King Alfred’ and his Biblical Laws..... 1289
Ch. 23	English Common Law from Edward the Elder to Edward the Confessor ... 1331
Ch. 24	Anglo-Norman Common Law from the <i>Domesday Book</i> to <i>Magna Carta</i> . 1375
Ch. 25	English Law from King John’s death to the Protestant Reformation..... 1417
<b>PART VII – ENGLISH LAW: REFORMATION TO PURITAN PARLIAMENTS</b>	
Ch. 26	The Decalogical Anti-Romish Reformers: Luther, Zwingli and Calvin..... 1461
Ch. 27	The use of the Mosaic Laws by Calvin, Bullinger, Beza & De Bres ..... 1529
Ch. 28	The Protestantization of Tudor England (1531 to 1603) ..... 1581
Ch. 29	King James I and Christian Britain’s Puritanization, 1603-25..... 1645
Ch. 30	Puritanism during the Early Reign of King Charles I, 1625-1642 ..... 1693
<b>PART VIII – COMMON LAW’S IMPACT ON WESTMINSTER PURITANISM</b>	
Ch. 31	The Commissioning and Convening of the Westminster Assembly..... 1733
Ch. 32	The <i>Westminster Shorter</i> and <i>Larger Catechisms</i> on Government ..... 1775
Ch. 33	The Governmental Implications of the <i>Westminster Confession</i> ..... 1819
Ch. 34	The Political Impact of Other Westminster Standards ..... 1889
<b>PART IX – THE POST-WESTMINSTER COMMON LAW IN ENGLAND</b>	
Ch. 35	Romanizers vs. Protesters: 1642-49 Religious Wars in Britain ..... 1933
Ch. 36	Oliver Cromwell’s Christian Commonwealth, 1649-59 ..... 1977
Ch. 37	Britain from the Restoration and the ‘Glorious Revolution’ till 1993..... 2015
<b>PART X – THE DEVELOPMENT OF COMMON LAW IN AMERICA AND AUSTRALIA</b>	
Ch. 38	American Common Law ere the 1776 <i>Declaration of Independence</i> ..... 2077
Ch. 39	The Common Law in Independent America till A.D. 1800..... 2143
Ch. 40	U.S. Common Law during the 19th and 20th Centuries..... 2207
Ch. 41	The Common Law in Australia from A.D. 1788 to 1993 ..... 2259
Ch. 42	Conclusions about the Roots and Fruits of Our Common Law ..... 2347
Epilogue ..... 2425	

TABLE OF CONTENTS

**ADDENDA FOR THE FURTHER STUDY OF THE COMMON LAW  
(for the 1578f Holinshed, see our 1992 separate study *Early Britain*)**

Addendum 1	Blackstone on the History of British Common Law.....	2445
Addendum 2	Blackstone on the Superiority of British to Roman Law .....	2477
Addendum 3	The B.C. Background of the Ancient British Islanders .....	2499
Addendum 4	Cimmerians, Scythians, Sacae and the Ancient British Isles .....	2525
Addendum 5	Lluyd on the Ancient Irish and the Subsequent Britons .....	2561
Addendum 6	Dr. Parsons on the <i>Remains of Japhet</i> .....	2565
Addendum 7	Sir Henry Maine on the Antiquity of Celtic Law .....	2581
Addendum 8	Stonehenge and the Ancient-British Druids.....	2593
Addendum 9	Survey of Dr. Piggott's Book <i>The Druids</i> .....	2621
Addendum 10	Some Aspects of the 'British-Israel' Theory.....	2633
Addendum 11	Ancient Britons, Celts & Germans in Diodorus & Julius Caesar.....	2651
Addendum 12	Strabo, Pliny & Josephus: Britons, Celts, Germans, Jews & Rome .	2667
Addendum 13	Suetonius on the 1st-Century B.C. & A.D. Pagan Roman Empire ..	2693
Addendum 14	Tacitus on Britain and Eurasia in the 1st Century A.D.....	2709
Addendum 15	Dio Chrysostom & Dio Cassius on the Ancient Britons.....	2747
Addendum 16	Edward Gibbon on Rome's Decline and Britain's Ascent.....	2763
Addendum 17	Glastonbury and Early British Christianity .....	2799
Addendum 18	Gildas the First Extant Celto-Brythonic Church Historian .....	2807
Addendum 19	Survey of Trevelyan on Wales as the 'Land of Arthur' .....	2835
Addendum 20	The A.D. 796f Nenni(us) on the History of the Britons.....	2857
Addendum 21	Geoffrey Arthur of Monmouth's <i>History of Britain's Kings</i> .....	2871
Addendum 22	William of Malmesbury on Early British History .....	2891
Addendum 23	Henry of Huntingdon's B.C. 60 to A.D. 1154 <i>History of Britain</i> ....	2911
Addendum 24	Flintoff on the Rise of the Laws in England and Wales .....	2931
Addendum 25	The Chadwick <i>Studies in Early British History</i> .....	2951
Addendum 26	Lord Chief Justice Sir Edward Coke on British Common Law .....	2973
Addendum 27	John Selden on the Early Laws of the Ancient Britons .....	2981
Addendum 28	The Sceptic Sir David Hume on the Pre-880 History of Britain.....	2995
Addendum 29	Bede on Britain's A.D. 156-731 <i>Church History</i> .....	3007
Addendum 30	Dr. Alexander Mitchell on the Celtic Church and the Culdees.....	3029
Addendum 31	Rev. Professor Dr. J.T. McNeill on the Early-Celtic Churches .....	3039
Addendum 32	Survey of Blair's <i>Roman Britain and Early England</i> .....	3053
Addendum 33	Rev. James Mackenzie on the Early Scottish Church.....	3071
Addendum 34	Rev. Prof. Dr. G.T. Stokes on Christianity in Ancient Ireland.....	3085
Addendum 35	Rev. W.T. Latimer on the Early-Irish Church.....	3093
Addendum 36	Rev. Dr. John A. Duke on the Church of Columba.....	3099
Addendum 37	Survey of Eliot's <i>Festschrift: 'Essays in Anglo-Saxon Law'</i> .....	3115
Addendum 38	F.L. Attenborough's <i>Laws of the Earliest English Kings</i> .....	3127
Addendum 39	Prof. J.R. Green on the Christianization of the Anglo-Saxons.....	3157
Addendum 40	The Colonization and Christianization of Iceland (A.D. 575f).....	3175
Addendum 41	The Christian Discovery and Settlement of Greenland (A.D. 982f) .	3187
Addendum 42	Pre-Colonial Biblical Influences on Early America .....	3193
Addendum 43	U.S. Secedes from Britain and South from U.S.A.....	3199
Addendum 44	A.H. Stephens on Christ's C.S.A. Confederacy .....	3251
Addendum 45	Dabney on Slavery, Secession, and the 'New South' .....	3311
Addendum 46	The 1884 Symington's <i>Messiah the Prince</i> .....	3349
Addendum 47	Althusius and Legal Sphere-Sovereignty .....	3359

*COMMON LAW: ROOTS AND FRUITS*

Addendum 48	Historical Importance of Brythonic Cumbria.....	3375
Addendum 49	The Cumbrian Patrick & His Work in Ireland .....	3425
Addendum 50	From Old Britain to <i>Westminster Confession</i> .....	3455
Addendum 51	Biblical Roots of the <i>Australian Constitution</i> .....	3537
Addendum 52	Australian Law and Native Title (as in <i>Mabo</i> ).....	3549

*TABLE OF CONTENTS*

**LIST OF APPENDICES ON THE COMMON LAW**

List of Chief Passages in Holy Scripture Discussed .....#  
List of Biblical Authorities Considered .....#  
List of Judaic and Classical Data Cited .....#  
List of Ancient British & Icelandic & Irish Documents Cited .....#  
List of Patristic References Quoted.....#  
List of Other Persons Mentioned .....#  
List of Main Subjects Discussed .....#  
List of Legal Cases & Codes & Journals Cited .....#  
List of Books in Select Bibliography .....#  
Biographical Profile of the Author (Curriculum Vitae) .....#

‘To the Law and to the Testimony!  
If they speak not according to this word,  
it is because there is no light in them! \_

~ The Gospel according to Isaiah, 8:20



# DETAIL TABLE OF CONTENTS

<b>PART II</b>	<b>THE BIBLICAL AND HISTORICAL BACKGROUND OF THE COMMON LAW .....</b>	<b>83</b>
<b>CH. 1</b>	<b>THE ROOTS OF LAW AND OF LEGAL RIGHTS .....</b>	<b>85</b>
	The inevitability and unavoidability of human legislation .....	85
	The Triune God is the First Source of law and legal rights .....	86
	The establishment of the <i>Law of Nature</i> and later of the <i>Law of Nations</i> .....	87
	A Judaistic view of the Law of Nature and the Law of Nations .....	89
	Western Law ~ from Mediaeval Christendom to the so-called :Enlightenment ~ .....	91
	Suarez, Austin and Pollock on the divine source of Law .....	93
	Calvin on the Law of Nature anent marriage, bestiality and homosexuality ....	93
	Calvin on the Law of Nature and consanguineous incest .....	95
	Calvin on the Law of Nature and the Moral Law in general .....	96
	Calvin on the Law of Nature and the differences between men and women....	98
	John Selden on the Law of Nature and the Law of Nations.....	99
	The <i>Westminster Confession of Faith</i> on the Law of Nature .....	100
	The relationship between law and civilization .....	101
	Christianity, the Law of Nature, and the Law of Nations .....	103
	Natural Law, Blackstone, and the U.S. <i>Declaration of Independence</i> .....	104
	The menace of (resurgent) Paganism in Greek and Roman Law .....	106
	Blackstone; the Common Law of England; and the <i>U.S. Constitution</i> .....	108
	The origin, character, and preservation of the Common Law .....	109
	The various meanings of the phrase :Common Law ~ .....	110
	The Canonist Dodd on the superiority of British Common Law to Romish Canon Law .....	111
	Why Common Law developed and flourished especially in the British Isles...	113
	The major impact of the Holy Bible upon British Common Law .....	115
	Robert Calvin, Lord Chief Justice Coke, and the Common Law .....	116
	The 1771 <i>Encyclopaedia Britannica</i> on the Common Law at that time .....	118
	The French Revolution of 1789: Greatest dechristianizer since A.D. 600f....	120
	Christianity and Common Law undergird the United States of America.....	121
	The ungodly French Revolution of 1789 and its awful aftermath.....	123
	The enduring nature and unavoidability of private property rights.....	125
	Private property assailed by U.S. Communist Gus Hall and other Communalists .....	126
	God ~s private property <i>vis-a-vis</i> the property of human beings .....	128
	Adam ~s private property <i>vis-a-vis</i> that of other created persons .....	129
	Adam ~s private property <i>vis-a-vis</i> Eve ~s and <i>vice-versa</i> before their fall.....	130
	The need for private property intensified after man ~s fall .....	131
	The impact of man ~s fall upon his private property .....	132
	Private property rights and the Mosaic Law .....	133
	Private property rights in the New Testament.....	134
	Social welfare work and private property rights .....	135
	But didn't the Early Christians in Acts 2:44f own everything in common? No! .....	136
	The futility of hoarding redundant property in the doomed Jerusalem .....	137

Christian social welfare through the charitable use of property in Jerusalem...	138
Christian property rights sustained everywhere in the World .....	140
The Anabaptist attack against Christian property rights .....	141
The attack against private property ownership is immoral .....	142
<u>Summary</u> : The roots of law and legal rights .....	144
<b>CH. 2 THE BIBLICAL DATA CONCERNING THE COMMON LAW.....</b>	<b>147</b>
The Bible's testimony anent the righteousness of God .....	147
Professor Berkhof's definitions of God's righteousness .....	148
The con-feder-ate nature of righteousness within the Triune God .....	149
The relationship between God and the laws He ordained for His universe....	150
The Triune God Himself the Root of the Decalogue for all mankind .....	151
The confederate structure of mankind before the fall.....	152
Unfallen man and the Ten Commandments.....	154
The Dominion Charter and the Ten Commandments.....	155
The Sabbath and the Ten Commandments.....	155
Marriage and the Ten Commandments.....	156
Salvation was never by our own works of keeping the Ten Commandments ..	157
The forbidden fruit and the Ten Commandments .....	157
The tree of life and the Ten Commandments.....	158
The <i>Westminster Standards</i> and the Ten Commandments .....	159
The impact of man's fall upon his obedience to the God-given Law.....	160
The Ten Commandments from the fall to the flood .....	161
Noah a righteous man and a type of Jesus Christ the "Second Adam" .....	162
The Tower of Babel and the origin of the <i>Law of Nations</i> .....	164
The primordial laws of the Japheth-ites living in the "tents of Shem" .....	165
The laws of the Shem-ites: Abraham and the Ebla Tablets .....	167
The Ten Commandments among the postdiluvian patriarchs .....	168
The considerably-degenerated <i>Codex Hammurabi</i> of Babylonian Mesopotamia .....	169
The superiority of Hebrew Law to the <i>Codex Hammurabi</i> .....	171
Early-Hebraic government through confederated Elders.....	172
Law Professor Edmunds's remarks on the Eldership in the Book of Exodus...	174
Judicial implications of the Eldership and its qualifications.....	176
Multiple socio-political implications of the Decalogue.....	178
John Owen on the permanent political implications of the Mosaic Law.....	180
John Owen's above-mentioned views followed by Zahn, Bergema, and Van Ruler .....	182
The Mosaic <i>lex talionis</i> always compensatory and never vindictive .....	183
The pre-monarchical confederated Mosaic Commonwealth .....	186
The Mosaic franchise was always qualified and never mob-ocratic .....	188
The Post-Mosaic deterioration of Old Testament Hebrew Government .....	190
Greater degeneration of the Law " among the Pre-Christian Gentiles .....	193
The Person and Teachings of Jesus regarding the Ten Commandments.....	194
Jesus Christ's teaching on political government for His Church .....	195
Christians will always be required to keep the Ten Commandments.....	197
The teaching on political government of the New Testament Church .....	198
Christian government especially through the hands of competent Officers ...	199
The importance of the Law in the teaching of the Apostles .....	200
The Decalogue a chief instrument promoting the advance of Christianity.....	202



*DETAIL TABLE OF CONTENTS*

Triune confederacies the desirable patterns for Christian action .....	203
Despise not the day of small beginnings in Christian political action! .....	205
God's Moral Law energized the Early Christian Community .....	205
The promised advance of Christianity throughout the world.....	207
The <i>Westminster Standards</i> on Christianity's promised advance .....	208
The Early Church knew how she would gain the victory over the World.....	210
Biblical principles for a Christian legal and political order .....	212
The godly in glory still keep the Ten Commandments.....	212
<u>Summary</u> of the Biblical Data concerning the Common Law .....	213
<b>CH. 3 CHRISTOCRACY BEFORE CONSTANTINE: CHRIST'S LAW</b>	
<b>WITHSTOOD!</b> .....	<b>217</b>
Judaism and Druidism on Christ's Law from His death till Nero's	
persecutions .....	218
Christ's Law from His death till Nero's persecutions .....	219
God's Law survives the A.D. 63 to 70 Great Tribulation.....	220
Christocracy in the <i>Teaching of the Twelve Apostles</i> alias the <i>Didache</i> .....	222
God's Law and Christocracy in the <i>Epistle of Barnabas</i> .....	224
Clement of Rome and the Christocratic Law of God .....	226
Christocracy and God's Law in the <i>Shepherd of Hermas</i> .....	227
The Law of the Lord in the Christocratic Ignatius of Antioch.....	229
Christ's Church survives the early post-apostolic persecutions.....	230
The persecuted Polycarp kept the Law of God .....	233
The Law of God in Justin Martyr's <i>Dialogue with Trypho</i> .....	234
Was Justin thinking also of Britain in his <i>Dialogue with Trypho</i> ?.....	237
The Law of God in Justin Martyr's <i>First Apology</i> .....	238
The Law of God in Justin's <i>Second Apology</i> and his other writings.....	240
The Empire's Christians kept God's Law even though persecuted under	
Marcus Aurelius .....	241
Theophilus of Antioch on the Commandments of God and Christianity .....	242
Christonomy in the writings of Athenagoras (of Athens).....	243
Irenaeus condemns the heresies also of antinomianism .....	246
Irenaeus on the antinomian and historic[alistic] Latin Antichrist .....	248
Eschatological optimism in the views of Irenaeus of Lyons.....	249
Clement of Alexandria: A strongly christocratic Christonomy.....	250
Optimistic Eschatology in the works of Clement (of Alexandria).....	253
The christonomic antidispensationism of the Roman Presbyter Caius.....	253
The christocratic <i>Apology</i> of Tertullian (of Carthage).....	254
The A.D. 196 Tertullian's outspokenly Anti-Antinomian Christonomy.....	256
Tertullian on the Christonomic Christianization also of Britain .....	259
The Trincentric Tertullian's Christocratic Postmillennialism.....	260
Tertullian on the future downfall of the Roman Antichrist.....	262
Origen's optimistic eschatology (despite his imperfections) .....	264
The anti-antinomian christocracy of Origen .....	265
Origen's Political Postmillennialism against Celsus .....	267
Hippolytus on the downfall of the Roman Antichrist.....	268
Christianity overcomes the persecutions of Roman Emperor Decius .....	270
Cyprian of Carthage's victorious christocratic eschatology .....	271
Christianity's great growth between the Decian and Diocletian persecutions ..	273
Victorinus's victorious views concerning the Apocalypse .....	275

The Christocratic Victory of the British Christian Emperor Constantine..... 276  
Summary of the triumph of christocracy even before Constantine ..... 277

**CH. 4 CHRISTOCRACY AFTER CONSTANTINE: CHRIST'S LAW RECOGNIZED!..... 279**  
 Constantine's establishment of a Christian Commonwealth ..... 279  
 Constantine's Tutor Lactantius on the predestinated doom of Pagan Rome .. 281  
 Eusebius on the historical importance of Emperor Constantine ..... 282  
 Eusebius's *Oration* in praise of the Christian Emperor Constantine..... 284  
 Eusebius: How God was advancing Christ's Kingdom through Constantine... 285  
 Post-Constantinian advances of Christianity *via* Athanasius and Cyril ..... 287  
 Christonomic eschatology in the *Apostolic Constitutions* and *Canons* ..... 288  
 From Ephraim to Ambrose: All nations are to call Christ blessed..... 289  
 John Chrysostom: Christ's Church will triumph over the Roman Antichrist. 291  
 Chrysostom on the future Christianization of both the Jews and the Gentiles.. 293  
 Jerome on the collapse of the Roman Empire and of the subsequent  
 Antichrist..... 294  
 Jerome on the triumph of the Church over the future Roman Antichrist ..... 294  
 Augustine of Hippo on the Church's triumph over Rome as the Antichrist... 297  
 Augustine's World-conquering Christian Postmillennialism ..... 298  
 The collapse of Rome paves the way for the rise of the Romish Papacy ..... 299  
 Gregory the Great of Rome resists being called the first Universal Pope ..... 301  
 Papacy denounced by Mediaevalists, Reformers and the *Westminster*  
*Confession* ..... 302  
 The Biblical and pre-papal roots of Ancient British Common Law..... 304  
 Ancient Celto-British Common Law derived from Noah *via* Japheth and  
 Gomer ..... 306  
 Gildas and Blackstone on Japheth's Scythians and Ancient Iro-Scotic Law.. 308  
 The Druids as Judges in Ancient British Common Law before Christ ..... 309  
 Christian influences in Pre-Saxon Celto-Brythonic Common Law ..... 310  
 Custom and the family in ancient Celto-British Common Law ..... 312  
 Influence of Christian Celto-British Common Law on that of the  
 Anglo-Saxons ..... 314  
 The Christianization of Anglo-Saxon Common Law ..... 316  
 Celto-Brythonic frankpledge and *leet*-courts absorbed by the Anglo-Saxons .. 318  
 Synthesis of Celto-Brythonic and Anglo-Saxon Laws into Anglo-British  
 Common Law ..... 319  
 The Anglo-British Code of Alfred in Wessex and of the Anglo-Danes..... 320  
 Anglo-British Codes from Athelstan to Edward the Confessor ..... 322  
 William the Conqueror and the development of Anglo-Norman Law ..... 323  
 British Common Law and the road to *Magna Carta* ..... 326  
*Magna Carta* - the Bulwark of Britain's Common Law Liberties ..... 327  
 King Edward the First as 'England's Justinian' ..... 328  
 The fulfilment of Daniel 12:7-12f from Wycliffe to Westminster..... 328  
 The *Westminster Confession* (and the French Revolution as its Antithesis) .. 330  
 The French Revolution's Awful Aftermath: Humanism and Socialism..... 332  
 The Russian Revolution as the French Revolution's Granddaughter..... 333  
 The soon death of Humanism and the resurrection of Christianity..... 334  
 The great strengths and irreplaceability of the Common Law ..... 336

*DETAIL TABLE OF CONTENTS*

The Common Law and Christianity as the religion of the future.....337  
Summary: The Post-Constantinian acknowledgement of the Law of Christ..338

**PART III THE DEVELOPMENT OF COMMON LAW IN PRE-CHRISTIAN  
BRITAIN.....341**

**CH. 5 COMMON LAW AMONG THE VERY ANCIENT MIGRANTS TO  
THE BRITISH ISLES .....343**

The Japhethites preserve the Ancient Common Law after the Babelic  
Dispersion ..... 343  
Judahite Dardanian migration to the British Isles after the Trojan War ..... 344  
Development of British Law during the second millennium B.C. ....346  
Customs and laws in Ireland and Britain during the second millennium B.C...347  
Preservation of original revelation among the Ancient British Celts ..... 348  
Migrations of Japhethites in general and Japhethitic Celts in particular ..... 349  
Various evidences that the Gomerites became the British *Cymri* ..... 353  
Rev. Professor Dr. Edwin Yamauchi on the Gomerites and the Scythians .... 355  
Hastings's *Encyclopaedia* & Gladys Taylor both identify Scythians with  
Scots..... 357  
Diodorus, Josephus and Selden on the identity of the Gomerites and the  
*Cymri*..... 357  
The earliest travels of the Cymric Proto-Welsh from Ararat to Britain ..... 359  
The Lutherans Delitzsch, Kurtz, Hengstenberg & Keil on Japhethitic  
Gomer-ites..... 360  
Japheth's Gomerites as viewed by the Calvinists Kuyper, Noordtjiz and Pink.. 362  
Rev. Prof. H.C. Leupold and Dr. Basil Atkinson on the Japhethitic  
Gomerites ..... 363  
J.J. Davis, F.D. Nicol, Calvin, Greijdanus, Ridderbos & J.B. Lightfoot on  
Gomerites ..... 365  
Ancient Celtic movements through Western Europe toward Britain and  
Ireland ..... 367  
The movement toward Ireland and Britain of the Scots and the Picts..... 369  
The migrating Gomeritic Celts preserved much of God's original revelation.. 371  
The primordial picture of Celtic life is best preserved in Ancient Irish  
records..... 373  
Phoenician influences on the Ancient Celts by way of international trade .... 375  
Clear evidence of links between the Near East and the Ancient British Isles... 376  
Summary of the Common Law among very ancient migrants to the British  
Isles ..... 378

**CH. 6 COMMON LAW AMONG THE ANCIENT IRISH AFTER B.C. 2600..381**

Was Ireland inhabited before the tower of Babel, or even before Noah's ark?... 382  
The Magogian Scythians' colonization of Ancient Ireland from Europe ..... 384  
The Early Proto-Celtic migrants in Ireland..... 386  
K. Neill's secular hypothesis anent the Ancient Irish..... 387  
The arrival of Partholan in Ireland around 1500 B.C. .... 388  
The Ancient Irish *Annals of the Four Masters* on the Nemedians *etc.* ..... 389  
Ollamh Fodhla the B.C. 1383 'Father of Ireland's Laws' ..... 392  
The Greek Diodorus and the Roman Tacitus on the Ancient Irish ..... 395  
The Pictish C-Celts in Ireland & North Britain and the Brythonic P-Celts.... 396

Herodotus on the Celtiberian connection between Eire and Spain .....	398
Theological and historical evidence of early literacy in the British Isles .....	400
Further evidence: Pre-Christian antiquity of Irish <i>Ogham</i> writings .....	403
Early Irish wealth in gold required a sophisticated trading and legal system .....	405
A.S. Green on the political and social structures of Ancient Ireland .....	407
Tanaistry – the Law of Succession in Ancient Ireland .....	408
The <i>Ard-ri</i> or ‘High-King of Ireland’ was both elected and replaceable.....	409
Laws and politics in Ancient Ireland many centuries before Christ.....	411
Familial solidarity in educational fosterage, torts and suretyship .....	412
Post-Abrahamic developments specifically in Ancient Ireland .....	413
Scotland’s Skene on the Iro-Scots of Ancient Ireland.....	415
The Pan-Celtic culture of the Ancient British Isles .....	418
Sociological similarities between the Ancient Irish and the Ancient Britons ...	420
Influences from the Near East upon Ancient Ireland .....	421
Pan-Celtic antiquarian perspectives on Ancient Ireland and Ancient Britain...	422
The Jurist Sir Henry Maine on the Laws of Ancient Ireland .....	423
Maine on the Law of Nature in Ancient Ireland.....	424
Maine on private property rights under Ancient Irish Law.....	425
Maine on social mobility among the Ancient Irish .....	426
Maine on the Ancient Irish Law of Succession.....	427
Maine on the contractual Guilds of Ancient Ireland .....	428
Maine on the Ancient Irish Law of Distress .....	429
Blackstone and Macalister on Celtic and Irish Law .....	430
Barrister Ginnell on the ancient customs and laws of Ireland.....	431
Barrister Ginnell on the Irish <i>Annals of the Four Masters</i> .....	432
Chadwick and Neill on the customs of Ancient Ireland .....	433
Ireland’s <i>Lia Fail</i> and the Stone of Scone in Westminster Abbey.....	434
<u>Summary</u> : Common Law among the Ancient Irish after B.C. 2600 .....	436
<b>CH. 7 COMMON LAW IN BRITAIN FROM B.C. 1800 TILL B.C. 1000.....</b>	<b>439</b>
The Britons’ traditions: from the deluge till their arrival in Britain.....	439
Evidences of literacy among the Ancient Britons .....	440
The migrations of the Early Celts from Armenia into Britain .....	441
British records on the first phases of Britain’s being colonized.....	443
Holinshed on the origin of Druidism as the religion of Ancient Britain .....	444
Samoths was reputedly Ancient Britain’s very first King.....	446
The Ancient Brythonic <i>Samothei</i> and <i>Magi</i> and <i>Sarronides</i> .....	447
The various human ethnic types in Ancient Britain .....	448
Ancient Britain’s golden and heroic age.....	449
Barrister Flintoff on Ancient British Law.....	450
Early links between Ancient Britain and the Mediterranean .....	450
Abury/Silbury/Stonehenge: ‘Britain’s Pyramids’ in Ancient Wiltshire .....	451
Life in Britain early during the second millennium B.C. ....	453
Ancient Britain often visited by mariners from Phoenicia.....	455
Hebrew influences on Ancient Cornwall.....	456
Ancient Britain’s influence on other countries.....	457
The importance of the <i>Ancient British Triads</i> .....	458
The <i>Barddas</i> and Ancient British Common Law .....	459
The Druids at the Ancient British Parliamentary Assemblies.....	459
Parliamentary <i>Gorseddau</i> in various parts of Ancient Britain.....	460

DETAIL TABLE OF CONTENTS

The political importance of the *Ancient British Triads* ..... 461  
Hu Gadarn as the pre-eminent hero in Ancient Britain ..... 463  
Druidism the religion of Ancient Britain ..... 464  
Comparison between British Druidism and the Old Testament ..... 466  
British Druidism and capital punishment..... 466  
British Druidism on trinitarianism and creation ..... 468  
British Druidism and the religion of the Pre-Abrahamic Patriarchs ..... 470  
Abraham's religion compared to Early-Brythonic Druidism..... 471  
Northwest European Druidism headquartered in Ancient Britain..... 473  
Contact between British Druidism and the Near East ..... 474  
The Old Testament oak-trees and Early-Brythonic Druidism ..... 475  
Philosophical achievements of the Druids in Early Britain ..... 477  
The function of mistletoe in British Druidism ..... 478  
British druidic sacrifices and capital punishment..... 479  
Historical importance of Druidism in Ancient Britain ..... 480  
Ancient British Druidism's view of life and religion ..... 482  
Early Britain's impressive stone monuments..... 483  
The functions of Ancient Britain's Stonehenge ..... 484  
British Druidism as a preparation for the Gospel..... 485  
Post-Abrahamic Palestinian contact with Britain ..... 486  
The (Iro-)Scots in the British Isles from B.C. 1500 onward ..... 487  
B.C. 1200f: Trojan contact with Ancient Britain ..... 488  
Early Welsh sources on the Trojan Brut in Britain ..... 490  
Brythonic and English Mediaeval Historians on the Trojan Brut ..... 491  
Sir John Fortescue on Brut and on Ancient British Common Law ..... 492  
Raphael Holinshed on Brut and Ancient British Common Law ..... 494  
Coke and Selden and Sadler on Brut(us) and Ancient British Common Law .. 495  
Modern writers on Brut and Ancient British Common Law..... 496  
B.C. 1200f: further contact between Palestine and Britain ..... 498  
Dr. J.A. Giles (D.C.L.) on the colonization of Ancient Britain ..... 499  
Giles on Ancient Britain's monotheistic religion and sophisticated culture... 500  
Summary: Common Law in Ancient Britain from B.C. 1800 onward..... 501

**CH. 8 COMMON LAW IN BRITAIN AND EURASIA FROM 1000 TO**  
**100 B.C. .... 505**  
A comparison between Ancient Irish Law and Ancient Welsh Law ..... 505  
The Criminal Code of Ancient Ireland compared with Ancient Britain's ..... 506  
Professor Anwyl on Ancient Celtic crimes and punishments ..... 507  
The old records of Ancient British Kings and some of their exploits ..... 509  
Overview: South Britain's Kings from B.C. 1000 till the A.D. 43 Roman  
Conquest..... 510  
The Ancient Cimmerians and the Ancient Britons..... 512  
Various authorities on the Ancient British Celts ..... 514  
Overview of Kings in South Britain from Brut till Moelmud..... 516  
North Britain's Cumbria and Scotland - from about B.C. 700 onward ..... 517  
Brythons and (Iro-)Scots and Picts in Britain ..... 519  
Foreign references to the British Isles as the 'Tin Islands' ..... 520  
The Phoenician Himilco's B.C. 530 visit to the British Isles ..... 523  
The relationship between British Druidism and the B.C. 530f Pythagoras .... 524  
Greek testimony about the British Isles from B.C. 525f onward ..... 525

Hebrew influence on the Japhethites and thereby on the Ancient British Isles..	527
The degeneration of Greek Law after the time of Pisistratus in B.C. 560f.....	529
Did the Hebrews influence the Ancient Etruscans in Italy? .....	530
Slow degeneration since the Romans overthrew the Etruscans in Italy .....	532
The Roman Law of the Twelve Tables ~ from B.C. 451 onward.....	533
The degeneration of the Roman Republic into later imperial tyranny .....	535
The culture of the Celts in Ancient Britain from B.C. 600 to 500f.....	537
B.C. 510f: Ancient Britain's golden age under King Moelmud (Mulmutius) ..	538
King Moelmud as the link between Leill of Carlisle and Alfred the Great....	540
The further juridical and legal implications of Moelmud's Laws.....	541
Evidence of Hebrew influences on the Mulmutine Laws .....	543
Details of some of the Mulmutine Laws of Ancient Britain .....	544
The roads built by Moelmud and their role in spreading his Laws .....	546
The international influence of Moelmud's sons Belin and Brenn.....	548
Details of these Mulmutian Highways and their promotion of the Common Law .....	549
Ongoing influence of Moelmud's Laws even after the Roman Conquest of Britain .....	551
The influence of Moelmud's Laws on Elizabethan England and British Puritanism .....	553
Moelmud's sons influenced Celtic Europe and held Rome in check .....	554
B.C. 334f: The Celtic Picts and more Iro-Scots arrive in Scotland.....	556
Royal Rulers of South Britain after the death of Belin.....	557
Archaeological evidence corroborates historical records on Ancient Britain ...	559
The fourth-century B.C.'s Aristotle & Dionysius on the Ancient British Isles..	560
B.C. 330: The Greek Geographer Pytheas of Marseilles on Ancient Britain .	561
The British Queen Martia and her Martian Laws.....	563
Gold and silver coinage in Britain from B.C. 400 onward .....	564
Further evidence of cultural sophistication in Britain from B.C. 250 onward ..	566
Developments in Scotland during the last three centuries B.C. ....	567
General level of Celtic civilization during the last three centuries B.C.....	569
<u>Summary</u> : Common Law in Eurasia and Britain from B.C. 1000 to 100.....	571

**CH. 9 BRITISH COMMON LAW DURING THE FIRST CENTURY B.C.....575**

Ancient British technology during the first century B.C. ....	575
The famous Ancient-Brythonic craftsmen of Ynys Witrin alias Glastonbury ..	577
The civilization around London in the first century B.C. ....	579
Military prowess of Britons against Rome from B.C. 111 till A.D. 84.....	581
The success of the British Cimbri against Rome around B.C. 111 .....	583
Developments in North Britain and South Scotland during the first century B.C. ....	584
Posidonius the Greek Stoic's visit to Britain around B.C. 100 .....	585
Developments in South Britain during the first part of the 1st century B.C...585	
B.C. 72f: King Lludd renames Troynovant :London' and rebuilds its walls .	587
B.C. 61: Caswallon appointed regent (for Lludd's two minor sons).....	588
The B.C. 60 description of Britain by Diodorus of Sicily .....	589
Further discussion of Diodorus's B.C. 60 description of Britain .....	591
The collapse of the Roman Republic and the rise of Julius Caesar's tyranny...593	
B.C. 55f: Julius Caesar's description of Ancient Britain.....	595
Continuation of Julius Caesar's B.C. 55f description of the Druids in Britain .	597

*DETAIL TABLE OF CONTENTS*

Julius Caesar's perception of the Celts and their kindred in Germany.....	599
Caesar on Rome's B.C. 56 sea-battle against the Celtic Veneti and the Britons .....	601
Ancient British sources on Julius Caesar's B.C. 55 attack on Britain.....	603
Caesar's own account of his B.C. 55 armed attack on Britain.....	604
Orosius, Alfred, Trevelyan & Churchill on the B.C. 55 Roman attack on Britain .....	606
The Ancient British view of Caesar's second attack on Britain in B.C. 54....	606
Julius Caesar's own account of his second attack on Britain in B.C. 54.....	607
Subsequent writers confirm that the Britons defeated Julius Caesar also in B.C. 54 .....	608
The military camouflage used by the Ancient Britons against the Romans ...	611
The Britons' celebrations of their victory over the Romans .....	612
The strengthening of the Roman Dictatorship from B.C. 53 till B.C. 12f.....	613
The burgeoning of Free Britain even while Rome was a Dictatorship.....	615
The B.C. 20 testimony of the Greek Strabo about Ancient Britain.....	617
Clothes and coinage in Britain during the first century B.C. ....	619
The Pre-Roman Britons were commercial; literate; and often multilingual ...	620
Cosmopolitan cultural influences in Pre-Roman Britain .....	622
Pre-Christian Hebrew influences in B.C. first-century Britain .....	623
More evidence of Late-Hebrew and Early-Christian influences in Ancient Britain .....	625
Britain's communication systems spread Hebrew and Christian ideals .....	628
The impact of the Hebrews on Druidism and of the latter on Christianity .....	629
The last Free-British Kings before Christ: Tenwan and Cunbelin .....	631
<u>Summary</u> of British Common Law in the first century B.C. ....	632

**PART IV      CHRISTIAN BRITISH LAW BEFORE THE ANGLO-SAXON  
INVASION..... 635**

**CH. 10 BRITAIN EVANGELIZED BY JUDEAN CHRISTIANS FROM  
35F A.D. .... 637**

Was Christ's advent, when it occurred, announced at that time in Britain? ...	637
Cymbeline's rule over Britain at Christ's incarnation .....	638
Historiographical problems in dating Christianity's arrival in Britain .....	639
Pre-Christian Hebrew influences and Ancient Britain's 'Wise-men' .....	641
Great unlikelihood of the Gospel reaching Britain from or even <i>via</i> Rome ...	643
Britain's locality most favourable for her early evangelization .....	644
Dr. J.B. Lightfoot: Celtic Britain evangelized by her kinfolk in Galatia.....	646
Neander/McNeill/Bruce on an early Galatian/Gaulic evangelization of Britain .....	648
Dr. Margaret Deansly's thesis anent Britain's first church at Glastonbury ....	649
Historical corroboration of the Deansly thesis on Glastonbury .....	651
Could Jesus Himself while young possibly have visited Glastonbury? .....	652
The antiquity of Glastonbury's first 'wattle church' .....	655
Could Joseph of Arimathea have taken the Gospel to Britain by A.D. 35?....	656
Significance of Acts 8:1-4 & 11:19f & 21:8 for the early evangelization of Britain .....	657
Gildas on the arrival of the Gospel in Britain before A.D. 37 .....	660

Corroboration that the British Church was the oldest in antiquity .....	661
Ancient Druidism as a preparation for the Gospel in Early Britain .....	662
Evidence that Joseph of Arimathea brought the Gospel to Britain .....	664
Jowett's extended theory of Joseph's alleged trip to Britain .....	665
The fulfilment of Biblical predictions through Britain's evangelization.....	667
Some Theologians on the saga of Joseph at Glastonbury.....	669
Various manuscripts supporting the Glastonbury thesis.....	671
Joseph's Glastonbury helpers: Josephes and Lazarus <i>etc.</i> .....	673
Other evangelists not of Joseph's party in Britain before A.D. 43.....	675
Was Clement indeed in Britain (and even before A.D. 43)?.....	676
The missionary significance of the great famine of Acts 11:28.....	677
The Hebrew-Christians Cyndaf and Ilid arrived early in Britain.....	678
The impact of Claudius's (Acts 18:2) edict on Britain's evangelization.....	679
Did the Apostle James visit and evangelize in Britain around A.D. 41?.....	680
Had the Apostle James preached in Ireland before in Britain by A.D. 41?....	681
The story of Altus the Irish soldier at Calvary .....	682
Did the Apostle Peter visit Britain even before A.D. 43?.....	684
Were Claudius's edicts against Druidism and Christianity connected? .....	685
Did the Apostle Simon Zelotes visit Britain before A.D. 43?.....	687
Converts to Christianity in Britain before the A.D. 43 Pagan Roman invasion .....	688
Did the British Kings Gwydyr and Gwairyd or Arviragus ever become Christians?.....	689
King Llyr and Prince Bran and their religious faith .....	691
The Druid Ancestors and the Christian Descendants of Bran the Briton .....	692
Were Gwydyr and Gwairyd converted to Christianity by Joseph of Arimathea? .....	694
Did Caradoc ever become a Christian and, if so, when? .....	696
Were the Members of Caradoc's immediate family Christians?.....	697
Caradoc's two sons Cyllin and Cynon and their baptisms.....	699
Caradoc's sister Princess Gladys alias Pomponia Graecina .....	699
Jowett on the faith of Gladys Pomponia Graecina .....	700
The Roman Historian Tacitus on the faith of the Briton Pomponia Graecina ..	702
Bettenson & McNeill & Bruce on the faith of the Briton Pomponia Graecina .....	703
Was the Briton Pomponia Graecina's A.D. 43 religion Christianity?.....	705
British royalty and nobility converted to Christianity before A.D. 43 .....	706
Rev. Dr. John Owen: Christianity established in Britain during apostolic age .....	708
<u>Summary</u> : Britain evangelized by Judean Christians from A.D. 35 onward ..	709

## CH. 11 BRITONS, CHRISTIANIZING, RESIST THE PAGAN ROMANS

(A.D. 43-87F).....	711
The decline and fall of the Roman Republic before Julius Caesar.....	711
The Roman Historian Suetonius on the rise of the Roman Caesars .....	712
Law Professor Edmunds on the legal lapse of Rome from Republic to Empire.....	714
The road to war between Britain and Rome as from A.D. 10 onward .....	716
The implacable Pagan Roman hatred of British Druidism .....	718
The political situation in Britain just before the A.D. 43 Roman invasion....	720



*DETAIL TABLE OF CONTENTS*

Roman records of Claudius’s A.D. 43 attack on Britain ..... 722  
 Objective comments on Claudius’s A.D. 43 Anti-British attack ..... 724  
 The Brythonic accounts of their first A.D. 43 battles against the Romans..... 725  
 Other accounts of the Romans’s first A.D. 43-45f battles against the Britons... 727  
 Vespasian’s first attack against the Britons at Exeter in Devon..... 728  
 The Romans’s use of war-elephants to disrupt the Britons’s war-horses ..... 729  
 The Romano-British Treaty of A.D. 45 ..... 730  
 Recapitulation till A.D. 45 and the resumption of the Romano-British War.. 731  
 The Romano-British War moves out toward the western uplands..... 732  
 The Romano-British War gets underway with a fierce earnestness ..... 733  
 Tacitus’s accounts of the great British General Caradoc..... 735  
 Other accounts of Caradoc and his capture by the Romans ..... 737  
 Caradoc’s sojourn in Rome as a captive from A.D. 52 till 59 ..... 739  
 Tacitus on possible connections between Caradoc and Christianity ..... 739  
 Suetonius on possible connections between Caradoc and Christianity ..... 740  
 Pagan Roman Historians on the moral superiority of Caradoc to Claudius ... 742  
 Arviragus continues the fight against the Romans in Britain from A.D. 52  
 onward..... 742  
 New Roman Generals arrive to continue the fight in Britain..... 744  
 The Anti-Roman rebellion of Southeast Britain around A.D. 60f..... 746  
 Rev. J.W. Morgan on the Romans’s savage reduction of druidic Anglesey .... 747  
 The outrages against Boadicea and the beginnings of her revolt ..... 748  
 Queen Boadicea’s famous oration against the cruel Romans ..... 751  
 The last decisive battles between Boadicea and Paulinus..... 753  
 Venut and further battles between the Britons and the Romans ..... 755  
 Roman persecution of Druidism and Christianity in Britain and elsewhere... 757  
 Co-operation between Druidism and Christianity against the Pagan Romans.. 759  
 A.D. 75 to 87f: King Arviragus’s son Prince Meric rules from Westmorland.. 760  
 Tacitus on Agricola and his campaigns against the Britons till A.D. 85 ..... 762  
 The Romans finally get the upper hand over the Britons ..... 764  
 A.D. 84: The Romans decisively defeat Gwallog at Scotland’s Grampians .. 765  
 The Briton Gwallog’s ongoing resistance against the Romans till A.D. 87f.. 767  
 Tacitus’s A.D. 98f account of the subjugated Britons in Roman *Britannia* ... 768  
*Britannia* retains her ancient laws and her culture even under Roman rule ... 769  
Summary: The Christianizing Britons resist the Pagan Romans (A.D. 43-87f).. 771

**CH. 12 THE GROWTH OF BRITISH CHRISTIANITY FROM A.D. 43**

**TILL 100** ..... 773  
 The ongoing missionary work in Britain by Joseph of Arimathea  
 (A.D. 43-76) ..... 773  
 The preaching in Britain of Simon the Zealot and Peter till at least A.D. 44f... 774  
 Aulus Plautius and his Christian wife Gladys Graecina Pomponia in Britain .. 774  
 Rufus Pudentius and his British Christian wife Gladys Claudia in Rome..... 775  
 The Christian British Royal Family exiled in Rome ..... 776  
 Claudia the Christian daughter of the British Prince Cogidumnus’s ..... 777  
 The Briton Llyr Llediaith with his grandson Caradoc in Rome..... 779  
 The Briton Caradoc’s son the Christian Cyllin in Rome ..... 780  
 The British Prince Caradoc’s son Linus becomes Presbyter and Overseer  
 at Rome ..... 781  
 More recent comments on the actions of the Briton Linus at Rome ..... 783

More particulars about Caradoc's daughter Gladys Claudia .....	784
The actions of Caradoc's daughter Gladys Claudia in Rome .....	785
Something about the Christian covenant children of Claudia and Pudens .....	786
Were the Apostles Peter and Paul ever in Britain - before dying in Rome? ..	787
Paul's sojourn among the Britons in Rome - before going to Britain.....	788
Paul sends Aristobulus from Rome to Britain around A.D. 58.....	789
Those who accompanied Aristobulus on his trip to Britain.....	791
Caradoc's daughter Eurgain's return to Britain with Aristobulus.....	792
Aristobulus's work in Britain from A.D. 58 onward.....	793
Caradoc's daughter Eurgain's return to Britain with Aristobulus.....	794
Caradoc's daughter Eurgain's work for Christ after returning to Britain.....	795
Did the Apostle Barnabas at least once visit Britain?.....	797
The Briton Bran the Blessed's sojourn in Rome from A.D. 59 to 66f.....	797
Caradoc's A.D. 59 return from Rome to Britain and his subsequent actions there .....	798
Caradoc's alleged A.D. 61f Missionary Work in Ireland and in Britain .....	800
The Apostle Paul's alleged visit(s) to Britain after A.D. 58f.....	801
Ancient manuscripts on Paul's alleged visit(s) to Britain.....	803
The All-British <i>Triads of Paul the Apostle</i> .....	805
Patristic fathers like Jerome and Theodoret on Paul in Britain.....	806
Subsequent Theologians like Ussher and Alford on Paul in Britain .....	807
The early christianization of the Anti-Roman British Druids and Druidists ..	808
Simon the Zealot's second visit to Britain (around A.D. 60).....	810
The Apostle Peter's <i>circa</i> A.D. 58 visit to Britain .....	812
Did also the Evangelist Luke ever visit Britain?.....	813
The return of Prince Bran from Rome to Britain in A.D. 66 .....	813
The Hebrew-Christian Ilid's trip to Britain in A.D. 66.....	814
Did the Apostle Andrew visit Scotland around A.D. 69?.....	816
The A.D. 61-to-69f Pagan Roman attacks against both Britain and Palestine ..	818
Clement's long-lasting contacts with Britain from A.D. 36 onward.....	819
Aggressive British Christian Missionary Work continues (despite Roman rule).....	820
Were the disciples of the Apostle John ever in Caledonia?.....	821
The evangelization of Britain during the Apostolic Age .....	822
Early Ante-Nicene testimony anent an Apostolic British Church.....	823
Later Post-Nicene testimony anent an Apostolic British Church.....	825
Later statements on Britain's evangelization in the Apostolic Age .....	825
Concessions by critics anent Apostolic-Age Christianity in Britain .....	827
Rev. R.W. Morgan's thesis: Britain evangelized during the Apostolic Age ..	828
Implications for today of this Apostolic-Age British Christianity .....	830
<u>Summary</u> : The growth of British Christianity from A.D. 43 till 100.....	831

**CH. 13 BRITAIN BECOMES CHRISTIAN IN THE SECOND CENTURY A.D.. 835**

The christianizing culture of Britain not romanized even after A.D. 100 .....	835
Britain's local self-government even in the Roman Province of <i>Britannia</i> ....	836
Apostolic-Age Christianity and the British Culdees .....	837
The Old-Celtic Version of the Bible in the Ancient British Church .....	839
The Roman Peace Treaties unintentionally help the British Church.....	840
Life in A.D. 100f Free Britain outside the Roman Province of <i>Britannia</i> .....	841
Prince Meric of Westmorland's son King Coill of Cumbria .....	843

DETAIL TABLE OF CONTENTS

The historic importance of Hadrian's Wall between *Britannia* and *Caledonia* .845  
The strength of Druidism and Christianity in first- and second-century  
Cumbria..... 846  
Anti-Roman ferment in North Britain even after Hadrian's Wall completed ... 849  
The *Historians' History of the World* on First- and Second-Century  
Scotland..... 850  
Christian Royalty from Arviragus and Caradoc through Meric and Coill to  
Llew ..... 851  
King Coill's son Llew the Lion alias King Lucius..... 852  
Prince Llew receives the Gospel from Elaun and Mediun..... 854  
Llew proclaims Christianity as the religion of Northern *Britannia*..... 856  
The Rationalistic Historians Harnack and Mosheim on King Lucius of  
Britain ..... 858  
The Romanists Fortescue, Genebrard, Polydore Virgil and others on King  
Llew ..... 860  
King Llew sends British Christian Missionaries to 'Darkest Italy' ..... 861  
King Llew's A.D. 183 request to the Bishop of Rome ..... 862  
The Roman Bishop Eleutherius's response to the Briton King Llew..... 864  
Llew's Missionaries' return to Britain for their further work there ..... 865  
The political and other fruits of Llew's elevation of Christianity ..... 867  
Influence of South Britain's Christian King Llew on Free Britain's King  
Donald..... 869  
Modern Church Historians on the Christian British Kings Llew and Donald .. 870  
Professors Williams and Foster on Second-Century British Christianity..... 872  
The significance of Tertullian's claims anent British Christianity..... 873  
John Owen: Christianity rooted in Britain even before the 156f A.D. Lucius .. 875  
Summary: Britain becomes a Christian Land during the second century A.D... 876

**CH. 14 CHRISTIAN BRITAIN, 200-320 A.D., OVERTHROWS ROME'S**

**PAGANISM ..... 879**  
The Emperor Severus decrees against Christianity and is killed in Britain.... 879  
The A.D. 229f/Historian of Rome Dio Cassius on North Britain at that time... 880  
Foreign testimony about Christianity in Britain from A.D. 200 to 250..... 882  
The progress of Christianity in Ancient Scotland ..... 883  
The illustrious successors of the Scottish King Donald..... 884  
The South British Christian refugees a blessing to the Caledonians ..... 885  
Non-celibate Early Celtic Monasticism in the Ancient British Isles..... 886  
Biblical influences on Ireland till A.D. 298 ..... 887  
Isabel Hill Elder: Irish Druids replaced by Irish Presbyters ..... 888  
Further evidence of Christianity in South Britain from A.D. 200 to 250 ..... 889  
King Coel of Colchester with his family resists Roman Paganism..... 890  
The British Kings Carawn and Asclepiodot agitate for freedom from pagan  
Rome ..... 891  
The Pagan Roman Diocletian's Anti-Christian persecutions even in Britain ... 892  
The first British Christian martyrs: the godly Alban and others ..... 894  
Jowett on Constantius and Helena as the parents of Constantine ..... 895  
Evaluation of the above thesis of Jowett anent Constantine's parents ..... 896  
Other sources on the parents of the Briton Constantine ..... 898  
Was Constantine's father Constantius himself a Briton - and a Christian? ... 899  
Rev. Professor Dr. Schaff on Constantius and on the Briton Constantine ..... 900

Rev. Professor Dr. Richardson on the birthplace of Constantine..... 901  
 Constantine’s later laws evidence his youthful profession of Christianity..... 902  
 St. George of Palestine and his influence on Britain around A.D. 300*f*..... 904  
 The Briton Constantine proclaimed as the first Christian Emperor of Rome. 906  
 Rev. Professor Dr. Philip Schaff on Constantine and his mother Helena..... 906  
 Eusebius’s eulogy to Constantine after his triumph in A.D. 312 ..... 907  
 Gladys Taylor on the life and times of the Briton Constantine..... 908  
 The Briton Constantine’s ecclesiastical actions between A.D. 310 and 320 .. 910  
 The great political importance of Constantine and the fall of Pagan Rome ... 911  
 The Church Historian Eusebius on the life of Constantine..... 912  
 Eusebius on the Briton Constantine’s Imperial Edicts ..... 913  
 Constantine’s Christian concern for the public’s welfare ..... 914  
 Eusebius on Constantine’s legislation in general ..... 915  
 Eusebius regarding Constantine’s public discourses ..... 916  
 Rev. Professor Dr. Richardson’s assessment of the life of Constantine..... 917  
 Westminster Training College’s Rev. Dr. Workman on the Laws of  
 Constantine..... 919  
 Eusebius’s *Oration* on the Thirtieth Anniversary of Constantine’s Reign .... 920  
 Eusebius briefly recounts Christ’s recent achievements through Constantine.. 921  
 Subsequent evaluations of Helen and her son Constantine..... 922  
 The ongoing Celto-Brythonic legacy of Constantine’s Britain..... 923  
Summary: Christian Britain, A.D. 200-320, overthrows Paganism in Rome. 924

**CH. 15 BRITISH COMMON LAW FROM CONSTANTINE TO SAINT**

**PATRICK** ..... 927  
 Relationship between North Britain & South Britain during the fourth  
 century..... 927  
 The impact of Constantine’s children on fourth-century Britain ..... 929  
 The Roman province of *Britannia* attacked by Scots, Picts and Saxons..... 930  
 South-British Christians maintain their faith against northern pressures ..... 931  
 The international influence of fourth-century British Ecclesiastics ..... 933  
 Celto-British churches in Kent later romanized for Anglo-Jutish use..... 935  
 Resistance to Anglo-Romanism by Brythonic Christians proves the latter  
 pre-existed ..... 939  
 The evangelization and colonization of Little Britain from Great Britain..... 940  
 The attacks on Rome and *Britannia*’s rediscovery of freedom..... 942  
 Christian-political growth in Post-Roman Britain..... 944  
 The rise of ‘married monasticism’ in the British Isles..... 946  
 The early progress of Christianity in Ireland ..... 949  
 The British Theologian Morgan alias the later Heretic Pelagius ..... 949  
 Morgan’s sad fall into error after rightly refuting Romanism..... 951  
 British opposition to the later views of Pelagius ..... 952  
 Christian monuments in fourth-century and fifth-century Cornwall..... 954  
 The evangelization of Northern Strathclyde in what is now Scotland ..... 954  
 The life and times of Ninian the Cumbrian..... 955  
 Ninian’s famous church at Whithorn in Galloway..... 957  
 Other evidences of Ninian’s influence throughout the length of Scotland .... 958  
 The Roman withdrawal from Britain at the collapse of Rome..... 960  
 The re-assertion of constitutional government in liberated South Britain..... 962

*DETAIL TABLE OF CONTENTS*

The ongoing survival of Celtic culture during and after the Roman occupation ..... 964

Brythonic Missionaries inundate Europe after the Roman withdrawal..... 965

The Celtic Missionary Garmon teaches Patrick and combats Pelagianism .... 966

Irish Christianity before the work of Patrick the Briton ..... 968

Pallad(ius) the Pre-Patrician British Missionary to the Irish ..... 969

The clerical ancestors of the Culdee Briton Patrick of Ireland ..... 971

Was Patrick from the Clyde in Caledonia or from Brythonic Greater Strathclyde?..... 972

The significance of Cumbria’s Brampton to Patrick’s birthplace ..... 974

Patrick’s writings not in Erse nor Gaelic nor even Brythonic but in Latin..... 976

Patrick from neither Scotland nor Southwest Britain but from Cumbria ..... 978

Patrick’s grasp of the Ancient British Bible..... 980

Patrick’s capture by the Irish and his servitude in Ireland ..... 981

Patrick the Briton was a Proto-Protestant ..... 982

Holinshed and Hanna on the life of Patrick ..... 983

The Orthodox Christian Theology of Patrick the Briton ..... 984

The *Encyclopedia Americana* and the *Encyclopaedia Britannica* on Patrick... 985

Maclean denies that Patrick presumed a general apostasy among the Picts... 986

Patrick compares the British Christians with the Ancient Israelites ..... 987

The British Christian Patrick’s view of clerical celibacy ..... 988

Patrick not a Romanist but clearly a Proto-Protestant ..... 990

*The Historians’ History of the World* on Irish Society and Patrick’s Church... 992

*The Historians’ History* on Irish Society and Patrick’s Church (continued).. 993

The missionary zeal of Patrick’s Irish Culdee Christians ..... 995

Armagh and Bangor become strongholds of Christianity in Ulster ..... 996

Summary: British Common Law from Constantine to Patrick ..... 997

**PART V THE BRITISH CELTS CHRISTIANIZE ANGLO-SAXON COMMON LAW ..... 1003**

**CH. 16 ROME WITHDRAWS FROM AND THE EARLY ANGLO-SAXONS ARRIVE IN BRITAIN ..... 1005**

Maintenance of Celto-Brythonic culture during the Roman occupation of Britain ..... 1005

Brythonic culture maintained in England also after the Anglo-Saxons arrived ..... 1005

Initial influence of Celto-British Christian majority on Anglo-Saxon minority..... 1006

The Pro-Roman Gibbon’s warped perspective on the Britons and the Saxons ..... 1008

The Anglo-Saxons move westward toward Britain..... 1009

Gibbon on the shortcomings of Imperial Roman Law ..... 1011

Post-Theodosian and Post-Justinian degeneration of Roman Law ..... 1012

The pre-papal degree of christianization in Continental Common Law systems ..... 1014

The hybridization and the reception of semi-christianized Roman Law systems ..... 1016

Papal deformation of semi-Christianized Common Law systems on the Continent .....	1018
Non-papalization of Christianized Celto-Brythonic Common Law.....	1019
Influence of the Bible on the history of Ancient Celto-Brythonic Common Law .....	1020
High standard of the Common Law even of the Pre-Christian Anglo-Saxons .....	1022
Pagan Roman testimony as to the excellence of Pre-Christian Germanic Law .....	1024
Caesar and Tacitus on the similarities of Ancient Britons and Germans ..	1025
Continuation of Tacitus's A.D. 98 evaluation of the Ancient Anglo-Saxons .....	1027
Ernest Young on the high calibre of Anglo-Saxon Family Law .....	1028
The B.C. 58 Julius Caesar on similarities between the Germans and the Britons.....	1030
The A.D. 98 Tacitus on the Ancient Germans as kinfolk of the Celto-Britons .....	1032
Further similarities between the lifestyles of the Ancient Britons and Germans .....	1034
Pan-Japhethitic influences of the Celto-Britons upon the Anglo-Saxons....	1036
History Professor J.R. Green on the Early Anglo-Saxons in Britain.....	1037
Chicago Law Professor P.D. Edmunds on the Ancient Anglo-Saxons in Britain .....	1038
Ernest Young on the superiority of Anglo-Saxon to Roman Family Law....	1039
Brief overview of the progressive Anglo-Saxon conquest of England .....	1041
Christian influences on the Teutonic Franks and on the English Anglo-Saxons .....	1042
Wright and Trevelyan on the Christianization of the English Anglo-Saxons..	1044
Did the Celto-Brythons ever try to win the Anglo-Saxons for Christ? .....	1045
Britons hostile to Romanization (but not to Christianization) of the Saxons..	1047
<u>Summary</u> : The Roman withdrawal from and the Anglo-Saxon arrival in Britain .....	1048

<b>CH. 17 CHRISTIAN BRITAIN SURVIVES A.D. 429-500 NON-CHRISTIAN SAXON ATTACKS .....</b>	<b>1051</b>
The great strength of Pre-Saxon Christianity in Brythonic Britain.....	1051
The impact of Pre-Saxon Brythonic Christianity upon the Ancient Laws of Wales.....	1052
Further influence of Christian Celto-Brythonic upon Anglo-Saxon institutions .....	1054
The common origin of many Celto-Brythonic and Anglo-Saxon customs ..	1054
The Post-Roman Pre-Saxon reign in Britain of Cystennin Fendigaid.....	1056
King Cystennin Fendigaid and his descendants in Free South Britain.....	1057
The revival of orthodox Christianity in Britain - despite Pelagian pressures .....	1058
The Celtic Garmon's great triumphs in Culdee Christian Britain.....	1059
Celtic view of the Brythons' triumph at the 'Hallelujah Victory' in A.D. 429 .....	1060
The Englishmen Bede and Huntingdon on the Britons' 'Hallelujah Victory'..	1061

*DETAIL TABLE OF CONTENTS*

Initial consequences of and subsequent lapsings from the `Hallelujah  
Victory ..... 1062  
Vortigern’s foolish Brythonic alliance with Saxons against Picts ..... 1063  
The migrations of Britons to Brittany in the last part of the fifth century .... 1065  
The changing face of Scotland from A.D. 400 to 500..... 1067  
King Embres Erryll helps Britain recover from the errors of Vortigern ..... 1067  
Few British writings preserved when Saxons ravished many of their records.. 1069  
Britons’ view of first Saxon/Brythonic clashes preserved by Monmouth.... 1071  
The :English’ account of these matters as preserved in Bede and  
Huntingdon..... 1072  
David Hume on the 150-year struggle between Brythons and Saxons..... 1074  
Gladys Taylor on the continuation of Christian Britain even under the  
Saxons ..... 1076  
Roberts, Elder and Flintoff on the Brythonic influence upon the Saxons .... 1077  
The stubborn endurance of the Celto-Brythonic Church despite the  
Saxons ..... 1078  
Isabel Elder on Brythonic Church’s resistance to the new Anglo-Roman  
Church..... 1079  
Review of the heroic stand of the Christian Britons despite Saxon pressures.. 1081  
Overseas’ testimony anent Brythonic Christianity even under the Saxons .. 1082  
Early-Welsh Christianity from about A.D. 450 onward ..... 1084  
Williams, McNeill and Hanna on the great Early-Welsh Missionaries..... 1085  
The ongoing Brythonic military resistance to the Saxon conquest ..... 1087  
The consolidation of Christianity in Southwestern Britain and her colonies.. 1089  
The further strengthening of Christianity in Cumbria and Scotland ..... 1090  
The Brythonic King Uthyr Pendragon as the successor to Embres Erryll.... 1091  
Summary: Christian Britain survives A.D. 429-500 Non-Christian Saxon  
Attacks ..... 1092

**CH. 18 SIXTH-CENTURY CHRISTIAN BRITAIN FROM KING ARTHUR  
TO ROME’S AUSTIN ..... 1095**  
Early evidence for the historicity of Celtic Britain’s King Arthur..... 1095  
Sir Winston Churchill on the importance of King Arthur to Christianity .... 1097  
King Arthur’s exploits in various places throughout Britain ..... 1097  
The various :West Country’ traditions anent King Arthur ..... 1099  
Further historical references to King Arthur ap Uthyr Pendragon ..... 1100  
King Arthur according to Henry of Huntingdon and William of  
Malmesbury..... 1101  
The Elizabethan Chronicler Raphael Holinshed on King Arthur..... 1102  
The international prestige of Arthur the Christian Brythonic King..... 1103  
Geoffrey Arthur of Monmouth on King Arthur’s Anti-Roman Christian  
Kingdom..... 1104  
The time and the place of the death of Britain’s King Arthur..... 1106  
The demise of Celtic Britain after the death of King Arthur ..... 1107  
Celtic Missions continue in Britain despite resistance by the Saxons..... 1107  
Kentigern the Briton’s evangelizing efforts despite his people’s setbacks... 1108  
The Culdee Church of Kentigern, Columba and Columban(us) ..... 1110  
The oldest extant Brythonic Church Historian: Gildas the Wise ..... 1111  
Gildas the Briton’s utter devotion to Holy Scripture ..... 1112  
Gildas ideally suited to be Britain’s oldest extant Church Historian..... 1114

Gildas's outline of the Britons' Church History (A.D. 35f to 560).....	1115
Gildas strongly condemns the Antinomianism then corrupting the British Church.....	1116
The broader picture of a largely-Christianized British Isles before A.D. 560.....	1118
Vehement Mission of the Columban Culdee Church of Early Ireland and Iona .....	1120
Columba's prosecution of Culdee Christianity in Northern Pictland.....	1121
Columba's work in consolidating the Culdee Church among the Scots.....	1122
Scotic Scotland becomes independent of the Ulster Iro-Scots in A.D. 572..	1123
Columba's Culdee views impressed upon the new Scottish nation .....	1125
Rev. Dr. Duke on the characteristics of Columba's Culdee Christianity .....	1126
Latimer and Hanna on the non-celibate monasteries in Ireland and Scotland.....	1127
The Irish Culdees of Columbanus evangelized in Italy against Romanism..	1128
The Brythonic Laws remained even in spite of decisive Saxon advances ...	1130
The military disasters suffered by the Brythons in England from 550 to 600..	1132
Christian resistance of the Britons to Romanism during the sixth century...	1133
The A.D. 520-589 Dewi Sant: the Patron Saint of Wales.....	1135
The character of Celto-British Culdee Christians around A.D. 550.....	1137
Fifth- and sixth-century Culdees and Celtic Law in the British Isles.....	1138
Barrister Flintoff on the character of Early Celto-Brythonic Common Law ..	1140
The Saxons' progressive absorption of Christian-British values from A.D. 550f.....	1142
Culdee-Christian Celtic influence upon Anglo-Saxon Northumbria .....	1143
Culdee-Christian Celtic influence upon the 'Ang-lish' in Kent and Wessex..	1145
A.D. 615f demography of England shows Brythonic influences continuing there .....	1147
The emergence of an Anglo-British culture through increasing intermarriage .....	1148
The Britons' last victory against the Saxons: Wodnesburie, A.D. 591 .....	1149
<u>Summary</u> : Christian Britain in King Arthur's century (A.D. 500 to 600)....	1150

**CH. 19 THE CHRISTIANIZATION OF SOUTHEAST ENGLAND FROM KENT TO WIGHT..... 1153**

Christian Brythons in Kent before and after the A.D. 449 arrival of the Jutes .....	1153
The life of Aethelberht of Kent before his conversion to Romanism.....	1155
Brythonic resistance to the Romanist Austin and his Anglo-Jutish converts..	1156
Austin's acknowledgment of pre-existent Christianity to the West of Kent...	1157
Romish Austin's attitude toward his Celtic Culdee Christian contemporaries..	1159
Austin of Rome's fruitless attempts to romanize the Celto-Brythonic clergy..	1161
Details of Austin's A.D. 603 meeting with the Brythonic Church .....	1162
Seven gruelling years of confrontation between British Culdees and Romanists .....	1164
The A.D. 610f Romish and Anglo-Jutish backlash against the Culdee Britons.....	1165
Chief doctrinal differences between Apostolic British Church and Romanists.....	1167



*DETAIL TABLE OF CONTENTS*

Tensions between Brythonic Law and Roman Law and even Anglo-Jutish Law ..... 1169  
 Compensatory nature of the Anglo-Jutish :tariff laws~ of Aethelbeht ..... 1171  
 Offences re private property, sex, homicide, violence, marriage and servants..... 1173  
 :Semi-Biblical~ and :Semi-Christian~ character of the *Dooms of Aethelbeht*. 1175  
 Warren W. Lehman on the *circa* A.D. 617 importance of *Aethelberht's Code*..... 1176  
 The essential character of Aethelberht's Code according to Lehman ..... 1177  
 Survey of developments in the World and in Britain from A.D. 620 to 666.. 1179  
 The Kentish laws of Eadbald, Earconberht, Hlothhere and Eadric ..... 1181  
 The further christianization of Kentish Law in the *Code of Wihtrred* ..... 1182  
 The *Encyclopaedia Britannica* on Early Anglo-Saxon Law in England..... 1184  
 The early laws of the East-Anglians, East-Saxons, South-Saxons and Wightians ..... 1185  
 Brythons influenced the order of christianization of areas in Southern England ..... 1186  
Summary: The christianization of Southeast England from Kent to Wight . 1187

**CH. 20 THE NORTHERN ANGLO-SAXONS CHRISTIANIZED IN NORTHUMBRIA AND MERCIA..... 1189**

Northumbria's Pre-Anglian Christian Brythonic Kingdoms of Berneich and Deifyr ..... 1189  
 Blair on the Celtic Christianity in what later became Early Northumbria.... 1190  
 Sir David Hume on Pre-Northumbrian Bernicia and Deira ..... 1191  
 The A.D. 825 Brythonic Historian Nenni on Early Northumbria ..... 1191  
 The influence of Early-Celtic Common Law on that of Northumbria ..... 1192  
 The Northumbrian Aethelfrith's decisive victory over the Brythons at Chester ..... 1193  
 The initial christianization of the North-Anglians in Northumbria..... 1195  
 Edwin takes over and expands the Anglian Kingdom of Northumbria..... 1197  
 Edwin marries the Romanist Aethelberga of Kent and himself receives baptism ..... 1198  
 Edwin's establishment of Christianity as the religion of Northumbria ..... 1199  
 The great political expansion of Edwin's Christian Northumbria..... 1199  
 Coalition between the Christian Brython Cadwallon and the Mercian Saxon Penda ..... 1200  
 The life and times of the Culdee King Oswald of Northumbria ..... 1201  
 The Mission in Northumbria of the Culdee Aidan of Iona ..... 1203  
 The intertribal and international outreach of the Culdees from Lindisfarne... 1204  
 King Oswald of Northumbria succeeded by his less able brother Oswy..... 1205  
 The Christian Oswy's historic victory over the Non-Christian Penda ..... 1207  
 The Christianization of the Anglo-Saxon-Celtic Kingdom of Mercia ..... 1208  
 Consolidation of Christianity among the Anglo-Saxons from A.D. 630 to 660 ..... 1209  
 Beginning of the romanization of most Anglo-Saxons from A.D. 660 to 666.. 1210  
 The highroad which led to the epoch-making Synod of Whitby in A.D. 664f.. 1212  
 The immediate background of the A.D. 664 Synod of Whitby ..... 1214  
 Conspicuous issues addressed in A.D. 664 at Whitby's Synod ..... 1215  
 F.F. Bruce's account of the A.D. 664 Synod of Whitby..... 1216

The Synod of Whitby according to Williams, Roberts and Taylor.....	1218
Bede’s account of the A.D. 664 Synod of Whitby .....	1219
The Synod of Whitby according to the Presbyterian Rev. Dr. Warr.....	1222
McNeill on the abiding Culdee influence in Britain even after Whitby .....	1223
Duke on the role of the Culdees even long after Whitby.....	1224
Dr. G.T. Stokes and A.S. Green on Ireland from the seventh century onward.....	1226
The consolidation of Christianity in England from A.D. 675 onward .....	1227
Ongoing impact of Iro-Scotic theology and law on England even after Whitby.....	1229
After the Synod of Whitby: Cuthbert, Adamnan, Edbert and Aldfrith.....	1230
The Culdee influences even upon and through the Romanist Bede of Northumbria .....	1231
Influence of the Celts within Northumbria and upon England after Bede....	1233
Ongoing persistence of Culdee Christianity in British Isles even after Bede .	1235
The gradual decline of Northumbria and the rise of an emergent England ..	1237
Ongoing Celtic influence beyond Northumbria in the rising Mid-Anglian Mercia .....	1238
The great Anglo-Saxon Christian King Offa of Mercia .....	1240
Flintoff on building up Celto-Anglian Common Law in Northumbria and Mercia .....	1242
Flintoff on the Celto-Anglic institutions of frankpledge, tithings and shires	1243
Flintoff on the Anglo-British townships, courts and Parliament.....	1244
Flintoff on the emergence of Early-English Common Law .....	1245
<u>Summary</u> : The Northern Anglo-Saxons in Northumbria and Mercia christianized.....	1246

**CH. 21 WESSEX THE EMBRYO OF CHRISTIAN ENGLAND’S UNITED KINGDOM .....**

<b>.....</b>	<b>1249</b>
Brewer on the development in Britain of Early-English institutions .....	1250
Brewer on the unfolding of Early-English institutions (continued) .....	1252
The rise of the power of Wessex in the ‘Deep South’ of Britain .....	1255
The christianization of the West-Saxons in Wessex.....	1255
The Christian King Cadwallader as the last King of the Brythons in :Wessex’ .....	1257
Was Cadwallader a Celto-Brython, an Anglo-Saxon, or an Anglo-Briton? .	1258
Bede’s misrepresentation of the truly Celto-Anglic character of :England’ ...	1259
The life and times of the Anglo-British Wessex King Ine or Ina alias Ivor .	1261
King Ine of Wessex’s endowment of the Ancient Church at Glastonbury ...	1262
The greatness of the Anglo-British Christian King Ine of Wessex .....	1263
The representative nature of Ine’s Anglo-British rule .....	1264
Biblical elements in the Anglo-British <i>Law Code</i> of Ine.....	1265
Biblical elements in the Anglo-British <i>Law Code</i> of Ine (continued).....	1268
The high educational standards of Early-Christian England.....	1270
The evangelization of Darkest Europe by Christian English Missionaries ..	1271
The massive influence of mediaeval Anglo-British culture on the Common Law .....	1274
The strength of the ‘grass roots’ in Anglo-British Common Law.....	1275
King Beorhtric of Wessex and the attacks of the Pagan Vikings.....	1276
King Egbert of Wessex establishes the nucleus of :England’ .....	1278

*DETAIL TABLE OF CONTENTS*

Nenni(us) the famous A.D. 825 Brythonic Historian of Ancient Britain .....	1279
Nenni on Ancient Britain’s History from Brut to Llew .....	1280
Wessex after King Egbert: from King Aethelwulf to King Alfred .....	1281
Pre-Alfredian Anglo-Brythonic Law the root of English and American Common Law .....	1282
A final note on Scotland and the tenacity of the Culdees there .....	1284
<u>Summary</u> of Wessex and the emergence of a United Kingdom of Christian England .....	1284

**PART VI BRITISH COMMON LAW: FROM ALFRED TO THE REFORMATION ..... 1287**

**CH. 22 ENGLAND’S “GOOD KING ALFRED” AND HIS BIBLICAL LAWS..... 1289**

The early life and times of the English King Alfred the Great .....	1289
The military and political achievements of Alfred the Great .....	1292
The extant writings of King Alfred the Great .....	1293
Alfred on the history of Britain before the Anglo-Saxons arrived .....	1295
King Alfred on the history of Britain since the arrival of the Anglo-Saxons..	1297
The sceptical historian Sir David Hume on the importance of King Alfred...	1299
The History Professor John Richard Green on the Laws of Alfred the Great..	1301
Professor Green on King Alfred’s many other accomplishments .....	1302
George Jowett and William of Malmesbury on King Alfred .....	1304
Various other historians (from Huntingdon to Pauli) on King Alfred.....	1305
Introductory remarks about King Alfred’s <i>Law Code</i> .....	1307
Details of the foundational laws of King Alfred in his <i>Code</i> .....	1308
Further details of the case laws of Ancient Israel used by Alfred .....	1310
Alfred’s view that Christ & His Apostles preserved the Law’s :general equity’ .....	1312
Alfred on the continuity of Biblical English Law from Aethelbeht onward..	1314
Alfred’s ninth-century further developments of Biblical English Law .....	1315
Various legal opinions on the worth of Alfred’s <i>Code</i> .....	1317
Some of the massive achievements of King Alfred the Great .....	1318
Alfred’s place in the continuing expansion of Christianity .....	1319
Various historical authorities on the remarkable life of King Alfred.....	1320
The influence of Ancient Celto-Brythonic Common Law on Alfred’s <i>Code</i> .	1322
Excellence of Alfred’s <i>Code</i> and his <i>Treaty</i> with Danish Guthrum.....	1323
Holinshed on the huge importance of Good King Alfred to British Common Law .....	1325
Historian G.M. Trevelyan on the merging also of <i>Danelage</i> into English Law .....	1326
<u>Summary</u> : England’s ‘Good King Alfred’ and his Biblical Laws.....	1328

**CH. 23 ENGLISH COMMON LAW FROM EDWARD THE ELDER TO EDWARD THE CONFESSOR ..... 1331**

Overview of English Common Law from Alfred to Blackstone.....	1331
The blessed reign of Alfred’s son King Edward the Elder .....	1332
Laws of the Anglo-British King Edward the Elder for Non-Danish England .....	1334

The consolidation of the English and the Anglo-Danes under King Athelstan .....	1335
Overview of the legal significance of King Athelstan.....	1336
The Law Code of Athelstan the King of England ~ and of ~All Britain~ .....	1337
Athelstan's Code on the application of various Biblical case laws.....	1340
Hywel Dda's A.D. 940f Welsh Codification of Moelmud's B.C. 510f Common Law .....	1341
The merging of Anglo-Saxon Law and Celto-Brythonic Law as Anglo-British Law .....	1343
King Edmund of England and his very wise laws.....	1345
The short yet important reign of King Eadred in England.....	1346
The excellent English Lawmaker King Edgar the Pacific .....	1346
Flintoff and Chadwick on the English King Edgar the Peaceable .....	1348
King Ethelred (the ~Unready~) and his godly laws for England.....	1349
The hegemony of the Anglo-Danish Kings over the whole of England.....	1351
The life and times of the great Anglo-Danish Christian King Canute .....	1352
A brief sample of laws from <i>King Canute's Second Law Code</i> .....	1355
The sons of Canute: the Anglo-Danish Kings Harold Harefoot and Hardecanute.....	1356
The last Anglo-Saxon King: Edward the Confessor.....	1357
Recapitulation of the Pre-Norman development of Anglo-British Common Law .....	1358
The ~Property Franchise~ of Anglo-Saxon Christian Culture .....	1360
English political organization into <i>Hundreds</i> derived from the Bible.....	1361
The Biblical age of legal accountability in Anglo-Saxon Law .....	1363
The Anglo-Saxon Christian Common Law on Betrothal and Marriage.....	1364
Anglo-Saxon Christian Common Law on Marital Status, Property and Divorce.....	1365
The Anglo-Saxon Christian Law of Succession.....	1366
The Anglo-Saxon Christian Law of Procedure .....	1367
Pre-Norman Anglo-Saxon literature in general.....	1369
Barrister Flintoff's statement of Late-Saxon Christian Common Law.....	1370
<u>Summary</u> of English Law from Edward the Elder to Edward the Confessor .	1371

<b>CH. 24 ANGLO-NORMAN COMMON LAW FROM THE <i>DOMESDAY BOOK TO MAGNA CARTA</i> .....</b>	<b>1375</b>
The Early-Normans did not destroy but enriched Anglo-British Law .....	1375
The continuation of Anglo-British Common Law under the Early-Normans .....	1376
The Early-Norman William the Conqueror preserves Anglo-British freedoms.....	1377
Less happy developments in England under William the Conqueror .....	1378
William the Conqueror's resistance to the Romish Papacy .....	1379
The papalization of European Common Law on the Continent.....	1380
The deterioration of England under the Mid-Norman King William II (Rufus) .....	1381
The Middle-Norman King Henry I restores the Anglo-Saxon Laws of Edward .....	1384
The rise of Neo-Roman Civil Law and Romish Canon Law throughout Europe.....	1385

DETAIL TABLE OF CONTENTS

The deterioration of England under the 1135-53 Romanizer King Stephen... 1386  
The Start of the Diminution of the Papacy in England under King Henry II.. 1388  
The showdown between King Henry II and Rome's Thomas a Becket ..... 1390  
Henry II and the A.D. 1164*f Constitutions of Clarendon* ..... 1391  
The total impact of King Henry II's legal reforms ..... 1393  
The standardization of English Common Law under King Henry II ..... 1394  
The beginning of the end of Norman England under King Richard I ..... 1396  
Late-Mediaeval developments in Wales, North America and Scotland ..... 1397  
Late-Norman legal treatises on Anglo-British Common Law ..... 1398  
The roots and development in England of the Mediaeval Jury ..... 1399  
Deepening of the rift between the Church of Rome and the Kingdom of  
England ..... 1401  
The papal subjugation of King John and the 1215 Fourth Lateran Council . 1402  
King John's surrender to the papal legate Pandulph ..... 1403  
The road to *Magna Carta* and the papal reaction to that road ..... 1405  
The utter capitulation of King John of England to Pope Innocent of Rome... 1405  
King John's surrender in his 1214 *Ecclesiastical Charter* ..... 1406  
Barrister Flintoff's legal analysis of *Magna Carta* ..... 1407  
The *Historians' History* on the significance of *Magna Carta* ..... 1408  
Important excerpts from the text of *Magna Carta* ..... 1409  
Continuation of excerpts from *Magna Carta* ..... 1410  
Papal denunciation of England's *Magna Carta* and its anti-papal aftermath . 1411  
Assessment of *Magna Carta* by Blackstone, Hume and Green ..... 1412  
*Magna Carta* as assessed by Jeremy Lee and Eric Butler ..... 1413  
*Magna Carta* as assessed by Bailey, Hogue and Churchill ..... 1415  
Summary: Anglo-Norman Common Law from *Domesday Book* to  
*Magna Carta* ..... 1415

**CH. 25 ENGLISH LAW FROM KING JOHN'S DEATH TO THE**

**PROTESTANT REFORMATION ..... 1417**  
Henry III and the initial reconfirmations of *Magna Carta* ..... 1417  
Professor Brewer on the origin and progress of Parliament ..... 1418  
The many subsequent ratifications of the *Magna Carta* ..... 1418  
The Jurist Dr. Henry Bracton's *Laws and Customs of England* ..... 1419  
King Henry III's Parliaments of A.D. 1253 and 1258 ..... 1420  
Simon de Montfort and the movement toward more representative  
government ..... 1420  
The 'English Justinian' King Edward I (A.D. 1272-1307) ..... 1421  
History Professor J.R. Green on King Edward I of England ..... 1423  
The further historical and legal importance of King Edward I ..... 1424  
The growth of the Law and of Parliament in the time of King Edward I ..... 1425  
The Pre-Renaissance and the Pre-Reformation in Europe and Britain ..... 1427  
The situation in Scotland from Robert the Bruce to the Scottish  
Wycliffites ..... 1428  
The beginning of the godly reign of the English King Edward III ..... 1430  
The terrible scourge of the international 'Black Death' even in England .... 1431  
The English King Edward III's measures against Rome and Romanism ..... 1433  
Edward's Anti-Romish *Statute of Provisors* and *Statute of Praemunire* .... 1435  
The 1290 day-years of Daniel 12:11 end with Wycliffe in A.D. 1360 ..... 1436  
Details of Wycliffe's reforms from A.D. 1360 onward ..... 1438

Wycliffe on God and His Law as the sources of all government for men....	1439
John Wycliffe on the mediaeval heresy of transubstantiation.....	1440
John Wycliffe on the Pope of Rome as Antichrist .....	1441
History Professor J.R. Green on the importance of John Wycliffe .....	1442
Wycliffe falsely blamed for the Tylerite Rebellion of 1381 .....	1443
The ongoing influence of Wycliffe even after his death in 1384 .....	1444
The influence of the Englishman Wycliffe upon the Bohemian Huss .....	1445
Wycliffe's Lollards, because too influential, now persecuted even in England .....	1447
The influence of Wycliffe's Lollards in Scotland .....	1448
The 1470 English Lord Chief Justice Fortescue on Ancient British Common Law .....	1449
Importance of Chancellor Fortescue and Sir Thomas Littleton to the Common Law .....	1451
Henry VII as the first Welsh Tudor King of England.....	1452
The Christian character and great legal importance of Henry VII .....	1453
The Lollards in Scotland right down till the reign of James IV (1488-1513).....	1456
<u>Summary</u> : English Law from King John's death to the Protestant Reformation.....	1456

**PART VII ENGLISH LAW: REFORMATION TO PURITAN  
PARLIAMENTS..... 1459**

**CH. 26 THE DECALOGICAL ANTI-ROMISH REFORMERS: LUTHER,  
ZWINGLI AND CALVIN ..... 1461**

The Bible predicts the destruction of Romanism (thus Luther) .....	1461
Luther's increasing awareness that God was using him to demolish Romanism .....	1463
Luther's grounding of secular law upon the Holy Scriptures .....	1464
The Lutheran Reformation on the Moral Law for the whole of human life .	1466
Ulrich Zwingli's doctrine of civil government in 1531 Switzerland.....	1467
Civil government in Bullinger's and others' 1536 <i>First Swiss Confession</i> ..	1468
Calvin the Lawyer-Theologian and greatest of all Protestant Reformers....	1469
Calvin on Natural Law as rooted in God Himself .....	1470
All men recognize righteousness (for each is created as the image of God)...	1471
The awareness of Natural Law by man also after his fall.....	1473
Man's vicious and deliberate declension from initial righteousness and justice .....	1473
Calvin on the operation of the Law of Nature and Equity among the Pagans .....	1474
Calvin on the need for the inscription of the Law .....	1475
Calvin on the institution of human governments after the flood.....	1476
Calvin on the delegation of political functions even before Sinai.....	1477
Calvin on the great governmental passage in Deuteronomy 1:13-17.....	1478
Calvin on the <i>Lex Talionis</i> and the Mosaic Theocracy .....	1479
Calvin on God's ancient provision of Theocratic Kings .....	1480
Calvin on the restrictions imposed upon the Theocratic Kings.....	1481
Calvin on the predictions of Isaiah regarding Christ's Messianic Kingdom...	1482

*DETAIL TABLE OF CONTENTS*

Calvin on the predictions to Nebuchadnezzar anent the Messianic rule of Christ.....	1483
Calvin on the government and laws of the pagan Romans .....	1485
Calvin on the arbitration procedure in First Corinthians 6:1-8 .....	1486
Calvin on Daniel anent the christianizability of the Pagan Roman Empire..	1487
Calvin on Christ's World Conquest through His Heavenly Rule (in Daniel 7:13-14) .....	1488
Calvin on Christ's Kingdom's demolition of the Roman Empire in Daniel...	1489
Calvin on the replacement of pagan Roman Law by papal Romish Law in Daniel.....	1490
Calvin on Daniel's predicted centuries of papal oppression ere the Reformation.....	1492
Calvin on the Reformation's destruction of Romish Law and the Papal Antichrist.....	1493
Calvin on the Law Courts in the Acts of the Apostles.....	1494
Calvin on the courtroom trials of the Apostle Paul .....	1496
Paul's parenetic instruction regarding the Roman Law .....	1497
Calvin on Paul's legal advice to Titus and the Cretians .....	1499
Calvin on Paul's advice to Timothy and to the Ephesians anent the Law of God.....	1499
Calvin on advancing Christ's Law as the Way to success.....	1501
The subjugation of the nations to the Law of God through the Great Commission.....	1503
Calvin on Justification and the Practice of Righteousness .....	1504
Calvin on the Law of God in the `justified` teaching of James.....	1506
Calvin on the First Table in the Law of God.....	1508
Calvin on the First Commandment (anent serving only the Triune God) ....	1509
Calvin on the Second Commandment (anent the prescribed Way of Worship).....	1510
Calvin on the Third Commandment (anent reverence for God's Name and works) .....	1513
Calvin on the Fourth Commandment (anent sanctification of the Sabbath) ...	1513
Calvin on the Fifth Commandment (anent Human Authorities) .....	1516
Calvin on the Sixth Commandment (anent Human Life) .....	1517
Calvin on abortion and miscarriage in terms of the Sixth Commandment...	1518
Calvin on the Seventh Commandment (anent sexual purity).....	1520
Calvin on the Eighth Commandment (anent private property) .....	1521
Calvin on the Ninth Commandment (anent true reporting) .....	1523
Calvin on the Tenth Commandment (anent uncovetous contentment).....	1524
Calvin's Summary of the Second Table in the Moral Law of God.....	1525
<u>Summary</u> : The decalogical Anti-Romish Reformation of Luther, Zwingli & Calvin.....	1526

<b>CH. 27 THE USE OF THE MOSAIC LAWS BY CALVIN, BULLINGER, BEZA &amp; DE BRES .....</b>	<b>1529</b>
Calvin on the Mosaic Law and the extent of its Abrogation.....	1529
Calvin on the triple use of the Law of God.....	1530
Calvin on the place of God's Law in the life of believers .....	1531
Calvin on Matthew 5:17-27 in the Sermon on the Mount .....	1532
Calvin on the Moral Law's perfection and man's need to obey it .....	1534

Calvin on the qualities of God’s Law (and the Magistrates’ need to obey it) .....	1535
Calvin on the principle of Equity in Law.....	1537
Calvin on equity in money-lending, conscription, retribution and incest.....	1539
Calvin on general equity in usury and in civil punishments .....	1541
Calvin on the differences in punishments from one land to another .....	1541
Calvin on crime and punishment: with Moses and with us .....	1542
Calvin on the capital crime of adultery (as distinct from fornication) .....	1543
Calvin on capital punishment also for other capital crimes .....	1546
Calvin on the importance of not being cruel to animals .....	1547
Calvin on the death penalty for rape (but not for seduction) .....	1548
Calvin on the enactment of God’s Law by Citizens’ Compacts .....	1549
Calvin on the need for Public Officers to be godly .....	1549
Calvin’s implacable opposition to the antinomian Anabaptists .....	1551
Calvin shows that Holy Scripture opposes the Anabaptists.....	1553
Calvin’s disapproval of the Anabaptists’ fanaticism .....	1553
Calvin’s admonitions to his own King Francis of France.....	1554
Calvin’s many letters to other Countries’ Monarchs in Europe.....	1556
Calvin’s letters to the Polish King & Grand Duke of Lithuania, Russia & Prussia .....	1558
Calvin’s letters to England’s Regent the Duke of Somerset.....	1560
Calvin’s letters to England’s Edward VI and Elizabeth I.....	1561
Calvin on the best system of Civil Government.....	1562
Calvin on the duties of Public Office.....	1564
Calvin on violence executed by Magistrates.....	1565
Calvin on the Perversion of Justice by Judges and Magistrates.....	1567
Calvin on the requirement and right to resist tyranny .....	1568
Calvin’s conclusion: ‘Thy Kingdom come’ here and now on Earth, as in Heaven!’ .....	1570
The ongoing influence of Calvin on later Calvinists (and on Bullinger).....	1571
The socio-political importance of Bullinger’s <i>Second Helvetic Confession</i> ...	1572
Beza’s <i>Concerning the Rights of Rulers Over Their Subjects</i> .....	1573
Beza on civil government in his work <i>The Christian Faith</i> .....	1574
The Calvin-istic <i>Belgic Confession</i> on civil government .....	1576
Other early Calvin-istic Confessions of Faith on civil government .....	1577
The great German Jurist Althusius: pioneer of sphere-sovereignty .....	1578
<u>Summary</u> : How Calvin, Bullinger, Beza, De Bres and others used the Mosaic Law .....	1579

<b>CH. 28 THE PROTESTANTIZATION OF TUDOR ENGLAND (1531 TO 1603).....</b>	<b>1581</b>
The revival of Wycliffite Lollardry in Henry VIII’s England .....	1582
Henry VIII’s 1531 break with Rome and Edward VI’s consolidation thereof .....	1583
Dr. James Gairdner on the beginning of the reign of Henry VIII .....	1585
Rome assists Henry to annul his consummated marriage of eighteen years...	1586
The Romish Church’s analogous but quite pragmatic precedents and procedures .....	1588
The gathering storm between Henry VIII and the Pope of Rome.....	1589
Henry invokes <i>Praemunire</i> to smash the Papacy in England .....	1591



*DETAIL TABLE OF CONTENTS*

Henry's Parliament passes the 1533 *Restraint of Appeals Act*..... 1593  
 Henry's Parliament passes the 1534 *Dispensations Act* ..... 1594  
 The Pope's 1535 excommunication of Henry and the latter's response.... 1594  
 Henry and his Parliament firm up the Protestant Reformation in South  
 Britain ..... 1597  
 Assessment of the value of the reign of King Henry VIII ..... 1598  
 The regency of the Calvinist Somerset during the reign of Edward VI..... 1599  
 The blessed reign of the Calvinistic King of Britain Edward VI ..... 1601  
 Political and legal implications of the Edwardine *Catechism* and *Articles* .. 1604  
 The demise of Britain's King Edward VI and his successor Lady Jane Grey.. 1605  
 The successful power-grab in England by the Romish Princess Mary  
 Tudor..... 1606  
 'Bloody Mary' and her ruthless persecution of Protestants in England ..... 1608  
 'Good Queen Bess': Elizabeth and the 'Elizabethan Age' ..... 1610  
 Elizabeth's accession in England precipitates Knox's return to Scotland.... 1611  
 The wretched reign of the Romanist Mary Stuart Queen of Scots..... 1613  
 The clash between Mary Queen of Scots and John Knox..... 1614  
 'Wycliffe rides again' in the reconstructed Church of Scotland ..... 1616  
 The Church of Scotland's 1560 *First Book of Discipline*..... 1617  
 John Knox's 1560 *First Scots Confession of Faith* ..... 1619  
 Knox's triumph over Queen Mary Stuart and the 'Second Scottish  
 Reformation' ..... 1619  
 The English Elizabethan Age in general (1558-1603)..... 1621  
 Early Elizabethan laws promoting Protestantism and restraining Romanism.. 1623  
 The Protestant English Queen Elizabeth *versus* the Romanist Mary Queen  
 of Scots..... 1624  
 The hegemony of Protestantism in Elizabeth's England ..... 1626  
 Queen Elizabeth and the rise of English Puritanism ..... 1627  
 Interchangeability of Puritanism and Presbyterianism in Elizabethan  
 England ..... 1629  
 The power of the English Puritans in Queen Elizabeth's Parliaments ..... 1630  
 Romanists build the Spanish Armada for use against Elizabeth's England . 1631  
 The Spanish *Armada* destroyed by the Breath or Spirit of the Living God.. 1632  
 The Elizabethan Puritans' House of Commons and British Common Law . 1633  
 Anglican Puritanism in Elizabethan England..... 1635  
 Presbyterian Puritanism in Elizabethan England ..... 1636  
 Other Puritans on the importance of the Judicial Laws of Moses ..... 1638  
 Independent Puritanism in Elizabethan England..... 1639  
 General evaluation of the Elizabethan Era in England ..... 1640  
Summary: The Protestantization of Tudor England (1531 to 1603) ..... 1642

**CH. 29 KING JAMES I AND CHRISTIAN BRITAIN'S PURITANIZATION,  
 1603-25 ..... 1645**  
 The early years of the young lad King James VI of Scotland..... 1645  
 The 1580 *National Covenant* firmly condemns the Romish Papal  
 Antichrist..... 1646  
 King James of Scotland's 1583 *League in Religion* with Protestant  
 England ..... 1648  
 King James the Protestant Theologian (and his Lutheran wife) ..... 1649  
 King James of Scotland's 1603 accession also to the throne of England.... 1650

James clashes with the English Puritans and their 1603 <i>Millenary Petition</i> ...	1650
The British Puritans resist James's Doctrine of the 'Divine Right of Kings' .....	1652
King James the First convokes his first English Parliament .....	1654
The anglicanized James's attempts to depresbyterianize Scotland .....	1655
James's 1607 attempt to unify England and Scotland in <i>Robert Calvin's case</i> .....	1656
Friction between the new Commons and the 'Older Lords' of James's Parliament .....	1657
Anglican Puritans and the <i>Authorized Version</i> (alias the 1611 <i>King James Bible</i> ).....	1658
King James becomes deadlocked with the 'Addled Parliament' .....	1659
The life and influence of the great Puritan Jurist Sir Edward Coke .....	1660
The clash between King James and Sir Edward Coke in the Star Chamber... 1663	
Lord Chief Justice Sir Edward Coke on the Common Law as rooted in God.. 1664	
Coke on the Mosaic Laws and the Laws of the first Ancient Briton Brut[us] . 1665	
Coke's tracings of British Common Law from Brut and Moelmud onward .. 1667	
Sir Edward Coke on Greco-Celtic and Celto-Brythonic roots of the Common Law .....	1668
Biblical references in some of Lord Chief Justice Coke's more famous cases . 1669	
Later views on the importance of Lord Chief Justice Coke to the Common Law .....	1671
Common Law and the English Parliamentarian and Puritan John Pym .....	1671
The life and times of the great Common Law Jurist and Theologian John Selden.....	1672
John Selden's phenomenal antiquarian and legal works .....	1673
Selden on the old connection between the Hebrew Priests and the British Druids.....	1675
Selden on the antiquity and functions of the Druids of Ancient Britain..... 1677	
Selden on the remnants of true religion also among the Ancient Britons .... 1679	
The Westminster Theologian John Selden on the importance of druidic oak-trees .....	1681
Further statements in Selden of relevant archaeological importance .....	1682
Selden on the Japhethites, on Brut of Troy, and on British Druidism..... 1683	
Sir William Blackstone on the Puritan John Selden .....	1684
The 1616f King James distantiates himself even more from Puritanism..... 1685	
The Puritans' dominance at James's 1621 Third Parliament .....	1686
The end of James's reign and an assessment of his importance .....	1689
<u>Summary</u> : James I and Christian England's Puritanization (1603-25)..... 1691	

### CH. 30 PURITANISM DURING THE EARLY REIGN OF KING

<b>CHARLES I, 1625-1642</b> .....	1693
The ongoing puritanization of English Law despite Charles and Mary .....	1693
England politically and religiously destabilized by King Charles I .....	1694
The aftermath of King Charles the First's unsuccessful attack on Spain .... 1695	
The Parliamentary <i>Petition of Right</i> of 1628 .....	1697
The clash between Antinomian Anglicans and Christonomic Calvinists in England .....	1699
Charles the First's attempts to erastianize and ritualize even Scotland..... 1701	
The increasing persecution of Puritans in England .....	1702

*DETAIL TABLE OF CONTENTS*

Archbishop Laud's suppression of English Puritanism .....	1703
A candid assessment of the Anti-Puritan Anglican Archbishop Laud .....	1705
Dour Scottish resistance to Episcopalianism and especially to Erastianism...	1706
Vicious persecution of English Puritans especially in the Star Chamber .....	1707
Scottish events precipitate a showdown against King Charles .....	1708
The erecting of the Scottish <i>National Covenant</i> of 1638.....	1710
The contents of the 1638 Scottish <i>National Covenant</i> .....	1710
The Pro-Royalist Protestantism of the 1638 Scottish <i>National Covenant</i> ....	1712
The epoch-making consequences of the Scottish <i>National Covenant</i> .....	1713
Charles's futile war against the Scots after their 1638 <i>National Covenant</i> ..	1715
The 1640 successful Scottish invasion of Royalist England.....	1717
Further weakening of the English Kingship under Charles the First in 1640 .	1719
The English Parliament moves against the King's Supporters in 1641.....	1720
The <i>Root and Branch Bill</i> and the Erastian-Puritan Parliament.....	1722
Dangerous rebellions in Ireland unsettle also England.....	1722
The English Parliament's <i>Grand Remonstrance</i> on the state of the nation ..	1723
The English Parliament resolves to convene the Westminster Assembly ....	1725
The Royal Impeachment of Parliamentarians foreshadows a military clash ..	1726
Countdown to the outbreak of the English Civil War .....	1728
<u>Summary</u> of Puritanism during the reign of Charles I (1625-1642).....	1729

**PART VIII COMMON LAW'S IMPACT ON WESTMINSTER  
PURITANISM ..... 1731**

**CH. 31 THE COMMISSIONING AND CONVENING OF THE  
WESTMINSTER ASSEMBLY ..... 1733**

The historical background and importance of the 1615 <i>Irish Articles</i> .....	1733
The Irish Puritan Archbishop Ussher on Apostolic Age British Christianity .....	1734
The legal and political contents of the 1615 <i>Irish Articles</i> .....	1736
The influence of Archbishop Ussher's 1615 <i>Irish Articles</i> on Westminster...	1738
The background and international significance of the Synod of Dort.....	1739
The legal and political importance of the international Synod of Dort .....	1740
The impact of seventeenth-century Dutch Calvinism upon the British Isles..	1741
Influence of <i>Irish Articles</i> and Synod of Dort upon the Westminster Assembly.....	1742
The immediate historical background of Britain's Westminster Assembly .	1743
The parliamentary resolution to convene the Westminster Assembly .....	1745
England's grave national crises during the year A.D. 1642.....	1746
The English and the Scottish Agendas at the Westminster Assembly .....	1748
The several aims of the Westminster Assembly prescribed by Parliament ..	1750
The originally-political purpose of the Westminster Assembly.....	1752
The basic doctrinal unity of the Westminster Assembly's divines .....	1753
The various theological parties within the Westminster Assembly .....	1754
Idiosyncrasies of Westminster's divines no threat to their harmony.....	1755
Several Westminster divines on the calling of the Civil Magistrate .....	1756
More anent the Westminster divines on the place of the Civil Law.....	1758
The great Westminster divine Samuel Rutherford and his <i>Lex Rex</i> .....	1760

The differences between Gillespie and Rutherford on the judicial laws of Moses ..... 1762  
 Judicial law: differences between Rutherford and Gillespie (continued)..... 1765  
 Other Westminster Assembly Theologians on Church-State Affairs..... 1767  
 The Christonomous essence of the *Westminster Standards*..... 1769  
 Summary of the Commissioning and Convening of the Westminster Assembly..... 1772

**CH. 32 THE WESTMINSTER SHORTER AND LARGER CATECHISMS ON GOVERNMENT ..... 1775**

Dr. Thomas Manton’s *Epistle to the Reader* of the Westminster Standards... 1775  
 A short legal abridgment of the *Westminster Shorter Catechism* ..... 1776  
 A legal abridgment of the *Westminster Shorter Catechism* (continued) ..... 1777  
 A legal abridgment of the *Westminster Shorter Catechism* (resumed) ..... 1778  
 A legal abridgment of the *Westminster Shorter Catechism* (concluded)..... 1780  
 A legal abridgment of the *Westminster Larger Catechism* (Part 1) ..... 1780  
 A legal abridgment of the *Westminster Larger Catechism* (Part 2) ..... 1782  
 A legal abridgment of the *Westminster Larger Catechism* (Part 3) ..... 1783  
 A legal abridgment of the *Westminster Larger Catechism* (Part 4) ..... 1785  
 A legal abridgment of the *Westminster Larger Catechism* (Part 5) ..... 1787  
 A legal abridgment of the *Westminster Larger Catechism* (Part 6) ..... 1788  
 The *Westminster Larger Catechism* on the Light of Nature and the Moral Law ..... 1790  
 Moral Law summarily comprehended in the Decalogue (thus the *Larger Catechism*)..... 1791  
 The *Westminster Larger Catechism* on various governmental authorities ... 1792  
 The *Westminster Larger Catechism* on the protection of human life..... 1794  
 The *Westminster Larger Catechism* on the protection of human chastity.... 1795  
 The *Westminster Larger Catechism* on the protection of human property... 1795  
 The *Westminster Larger Catechism* on the protection of human veracity ... 1796  
 The *Westminster Larger Catechism* on the promotion of human contentment ..... 1796  
 The *Larger Catechism*’s Eight Rules for observing the Decalogue ..... 1797  
 The *Larger Catechism* re Non-Mosaic Bible Texts on the Mosaic Decalogue..... 1798  
 The *Larger Catechism* on Mosaic Illustrations of the Decalogue’s First Table ..... 1800  
 The *Larger Catechism* on Mosaic Illustrations of the Decalogue’s Second Table ..... 1802  
 The Westminster Larger Catechism on Christ’s Great Commandment of Love ..... 1805  
 The use of case laws in Westminster’s *Larger Catechism* and *Confession*.. 1805  
 The *Catechism*’s use of the judicial legislation in the Mosaic Law ..... 1806  
 The *Catechism* on judicial legislation in the rest of the Old Testament ..... 1807  
 The Westminster Assembly’s use of the Judicial Laws in Christian Church Polity..... 1809  
 The *Catechism* on the New Testament Judicials’ to explain the First Table. 1809  
 The *Catechism* on the New Testament Judicials’ to explain the Second Table ..... 1811

*DETAIL TABLE OF CONTENTS*

The *Catechism* on the heinousness of transgressing the New Testament  
Judicials ..... 1812

The *Catechism* on the post-resurrectional rule of King Jesus here and now... 1813

The *Larger Catechism* on the legal relevance of the *Lord's Prayer* ..... 1814

Summary of Westminster's *Shorter* and *Larger Catechisms* on  
Government..... 1817

**CH. 33 THE GOVERNMENTAL IMPLICATIONS OF THE WESTMINSTER  
CONFESSION..... 1819**

Short legal abridgment of the *Westminster Confession of Faith* - 1 ..... 1820

Short legal abridgment of the *Westminster Confession of Faith* - 2 ..... 1821

Short legal abridgment of the *Westminster Confession of Faith* - 3 ..... 1823

Short legal abridgment of the *Westminster Confession of Faith* - 4 ..... 1824

Short legal abridgment of the *Westminster Confession of Faith* - 5 ..... 1825

Romans 2:14f in the *Westminster Confession of Faith* 1:1 ..... 1826

Romans 1:19f in the *Westminster Confession of Faith* 1:1 ..... 1828

Romans 1:21 to 2:1 and Psalm 19:1-3 in the *Westminster Confession* 1:1... 1828

Cumulative meaning of Psalm 19:1f and Romans 1:19f in the *Confession* 1:1.. 1829

The 'light of nature' in the *Westminster Confession* 1:6..... 1829

The 'light of nature' in the *Westminster Confession* 4:2..... 1831

The 'light of nature' in the *Westminster Confession* 10:4..... 1831

The light of nature implicit in the *Westminster Confession* 19:1-2..... 1831

The 'light of nature' in the *Westminster Confession* 20:4..... 1832

The 'light of nature' in the *Westminster Confession* 21:1-7 ..... 1833

Christ's rule over Christians in the *Westminster Confession* 8:8 ..... 1833

The Moral and Ceremonial and Judicial Law of God in the *Confession's*  
chapter 19 ..... 1834

The Moral Law of God in the *Westminster Confession's* chapter 19:1-7.... 1835

The Ceremonial Laws in the *Westminster Confession's* 19:3 ..... 1836

The Judicial Laws in the *Westminster Confession's* 19:4..... 1837

The meaning of the words 'sundry' and 'equity' in the *Confession's* 19:4 .. 1838

Other Westminster Assembly documents on the meaning of the word  
'sundry' ..... 1839

Why only 'sundry' Judicial Laws 'expired' in A.D. 70 (thus *WCF* 19:4).. 1840

The 'general equity' even of expired 'sundry judicial laws' (*WCF* 19:4).. 1841

16th-century Puritans - and Wilkinson & Ward & the *Guide* on 'general  
equity' ..... 1843

The *WCF* 19:4's 'general equity' centres in the Decalogue itself..... 1845

The 'general equity' in Exodus 21:1 to 22:29 (thus the *WCF* 19:4)..... 1846

The 'general equity' in Genesis 49:10 (thus the *WCF* 19:4)..... 1847

The 'general equity' in First Peter 2:13-14 (thus the *WCF* 19:4)..... 1847

The 'general equity' in Matthew 5:17-39 (thus the *WCF* 19:4)..... 1849

The 'general equity' in Matthew 5:17f (thus the *WCF* 19:4)..... 1849

The 'general equity' in Matthew 5:38-39 (thus the *WCF* 19:4)..... 1850

The 'general equity' in First Corinthians 9:8-10 (thus the *WCF* 19:4)..... 1852

'General equity' in First Corinthians 9:9 & Deuteronomy 25:4  
(in *WCF* 19:4)..... 1852

First Corinthians (9:8-10) in the *WCF* - and (9:7-15) in the *WLC* ..... 1853

The christianization and the internationalization of the O.T. Judicials ..... 1855

The internationalization of the 'general equity' in the N.T. Judicials ..... 1857

Refutation of Kline's rejection of the <i>Westminster Confession's</i>	
Christonomous 19:4.....	1858
The implicit 'general equity' in the <i>Westminster Confession</i> 20:4.....	1859
Punishable crimes according to the <i>Westminster Confession</i> 20:3-4 .....	1862
The 'light of nature' and implicit general equity in the <i>Confession</i> 21:1-7 .	1864
The <i>WCF</i> 22:1-7 anent public 'Lawful Oaths and Vows' .....	1866
<i>WCF</i> chapter 23:1-2 on the Rights and Duties of the Civil Magistrate .....	1867
Rev. Professor Dr. A.A. Hodge on chapter 23:1-2 of the <i>Confession</i> .....	1868
<i>WCF</i> chapter 23:3 on the Rights and Duties of the Civil Magistrate .....	1869
Sphere-sovereignty and sphere-universality <i>circum sacra</i> and <i>in sacris</i> .....	1870
Magistrates to administer neither the Word nor Sacraments nor Keys ( <i>WCF</i> 23:3).....	1871
The State's power only <i>circum sacra</i> anent the Church ( <i>WCF</i> 23:3).....	1873
The Westminster Commissioners themselves on the <i>Confession</i> at its chapter 23:3 .....	1874
The 1647 Scottish Assembly and Brown of Wamphray on the <i>Confession</i> at 23:3.....	1876
Rev. Professor Dr. Shaw on the <i>Westminster Confession</i> at 23:3 .....	1878
Rev. Professor Dr. de Witt on the <i>Westminster Confession</i> at 23:3 .....	1878
The duty of the people to pray for Magistrates ( <i>WCF</i> 23:4).....	1879
Marriage and Divorce in the <i>Westminster Confession of Faith</i> (24:1-6).....	1880
The 'communion of the saints' according to the <i>Confession</i> 26:1-3 .....	1882
The Anti-Romish passages of the <i>WCF</i> (chapters 22:7 to 29:6).....	1883
Church censures quite distinct from State censures ( <i>WCF</i> 30:1-4).....	1883
The <i>Confession</i> 31:1-5 on the desirable harmony between Church and State .....	1884
The final judgment as the eschatological goal of the <i>WCF</i> 32:1 to 33:3.....	1885
<u>Summary</u> of the Governmental Implications of the <i>Westminster</i> <i>Confession</i> .....	1886

<b>CH. 34 THE POLITICAL IMPACT OF OTHER WESTMINSTER STANDARDS .....</b>	<b>1889</b>
The background leading up to the international <i>Solemn League and Covenant</i> .....	1889
The contents of the <i>Solemn League and Covenant</i> .....	1890
The parliamentary nature of the <i>Solemn League and Covenant</i> .....	1891
Relation between the <i>Solemn League and Covenant</i> and the Westminster Assembly.....	1892
Theological assessment of the political importance of the <i>Solemn League</i> . 1894	
Civil implications of the <i>Westminster Directory for the Publick Worship of God</i> .....	1895
<i>Westminster Directory</i> on the 'Observation of Days of Publick Thanksgiving' .....	1895
The political implications of the Westminster <i>Form of Church Government</i> .....	1897
The Westminster <i>Form of Government</i> on the need for plurality of rulers ..	1898
The Westminster <i>Form of Government</i> on representative local government .	1899
The <i>Form</i> on the co-ordination of the various tiers of government .....	1900
The primacy of regional authority in the government of both Church and State .....	1902

DETAIL TABLE OF CONTENTS

Provision for extra-ordinary rule in the Westminster *Form of Government*... 1903  
The Church of Scotland's 1647 General Assembly's *Directory for Family  
Worship* ..... 1904  
Westminster's readers should include `especially *Heads of Families* \_ ..... 1905  
The monitoring role for today of the Bible's Judicial Laws ..... 1906  
The Holy Bible on specific crimes and punishments ..... 1907  
The Westminster Assembly's *Sum of Saving Knowledge* ..... 1909  
Calvin's Calvinism on the true meaning of Matthew 5:17-27 ..... 1911  
Westminster's *Larger Catechism* and *Confession* on Matthew 5:17-27 ..... 1913  
Westminster's *Form of Government* and *Brief Sum* on Matthew 5:16-20 ... 1915  
Some other classical theologians on the true meaning of Matthew 5:17-27... 1916  
Some twentieth-century theologians on the true meaning of Matthew  
5:17-27 ..... 1919  
The present writer (Prof. Dr. F.N. Lee) on the true meaning of Matthew  
5:17-27 ..... 1921  
Summary anent the political impact of Westminster's other documents ..... 1927  
Conclusions about the legal thrust of the Westminster Standards as a whole.. 1928

**PART IX THE POST-WESTMINSTER COMMON LAW IN ENGLAND.. 1931**

**CH. 35 ROMANIZERS VS. PROTESTERS: 1642-49 RELIGIOUS WARS IN  
BRITAIN ..... 1933**  
The 1642 Outbreak of the Cavalier/Ironside English Civil War ..... 1934  
The religious and historical roots of the English Civil War..... 1935  
Rev. Professor Dr. B.B. Warfield on the parties in the English Civil War... 1937  
The issue was not initially King vs. Parliament but tyranny vs. Constitution . 1938  
Last minute attempts by Parliament to avoid the English Civil War ..... 1939  
Early successes of the Royalist Army against the Parliamentary Army..... 1940  
The English Parliament convenes the Westminster Assembly ..... 1941  
Professors Green and Brewer on the politico-international *Solemn League*... 1943  
But did the English and the Scots understand the *Covenant* alike?..... 1944  
The political actions of the Scottish Covenanters from 1557 till 1649 ..... 1945  
Pym's death and the embracing of the Parliamentary Covenant by the  
English ..... 1946  
After Pym's death the intolerant Independents strained the Puritan  
Alliance ..... 1946  
The Parliamentary Party's advances were next followed by its  
fragmentation..... 1948  
Power in Cromwell's Army passes from the Presbyterians to the  
Independents..... 1949  
The Army's `Radical Independents` promote Anti-monarchy and even  
:Mob-ocracy` ..... 1950  
The radical `Levellers` renounce Presbyterianism and embrace Anarchy... 1951  
The sad friction between the Erastian Parliament and the Westminster  
Assembly..... 1953  
The decisive Battle of Naseby and its important aftermath ..... 1955  
The King surrenders; is imprisoned; escapes - and again plans for war ..... 1957  
The *Historians' History*'s account of events from November 1646 onward.. 1958  
Cromwell's own ever-increasing movement away from Presbyterianism ... 1960

Charles the First tries to play his enemies off against each other .....	1961
The King and the Scots trigger off the Second English Civil War (1648-49).....	1963
The `Engagement_ treason in Scotland against the <i>Solemn League and Covenant</i> .....	1964
The reaction of the English Parliament to developments in Scotland .....	1966
The 1648 <i>Solemn Acknowledgment of Public Sins and Breaches of the Covenant</i> .....	1967
The contents of Scotland's 1648 <i>Solemn Acknowledgment (etc.)</i> .....	1968
Conclusion of the 1648 Scottish <i>Solemn Acknowledgment</i> .....	1970
England's New Model Army promotes a trial for the King.....	1971
Charles the First beheaded and the English Monarchy terminated .....	1973
<u>Summary</u> : Romanizers vs. Protesters in the 1642-49 British Civil Wars .....	1974

**CH. 36 OLIVER CROMWELL'S CHRISTIAN COMMONWEALTH,**

<b>1649-59</b> .....	<b>1977</b>
Cromwell's prior efforts to preserve the English Monarchy .....	1977
Execution of King Charles I and establishment of Cromwell's Commonwealth.....	1978
International reaction to the termination of the Monarchy in England.....	1979
The 1649 <i>National Agreement of the People of England</i> .....	1980
The new Chief Officers in the Commonwealth of England.....	1981
Cromwell's actions in Ireland among the Celts and the Anglo-Irish .....	1981
The Anti-Engager regime in Scotland from 1648 onward.....	1982
The move to crown Prince Charles as the King of Scotland.....	1983
The 1651f hostilities between England and Scotland.....	1985
The Scottish `Resolutioners_ and their adversaries the `Protesters_ .....	1985
Prince Charles signs the <i>Expiatory Declaration</i> .....	1987
The English severely defeat the Scots .....	1987
The soaring of Cromwell's international prestige after defeating the Scots. ....	1988
Cromwell captures Edinburgh and gives God all the glory .....	1989
The Scots foolishly proceed to crown the deceitful Prince as King Charles... ..	1990
The triumph of Cromwell throughout the British Domains.....	1991
Cromwell consolidates his Commonwealth Government.....	1992
Major developments in Cromwell's Commonwealth during 1653 .....	1993
The decline of constitutional rule specifically by way of Parliament .....	1994
1653: Cromwell's Army replaces Parliament with the Protectorate .....	1995
Oliver Cromwell on God's Law and English Law in the Commonwealth... ..	1996
The Christonomous Theologians in Cromwell's Christian Commonwealth.. ..	1998
The life and legal work of the great Puritan Sir Matthew Hale .....	2000
Oliver Cromwell's epoch-making English Parliament of 1654 .....	2002
The eleven Military Districts in Oliver Cromwell's Commonwealth of England .....	2002
The Puritan Cromwell's opposition to the power of Romish Spain.....	2003
Oliver Cromwell declines the offer of Kingship over England.....	2004
Parliament's 1657 <i>Humble Petition and Advice</i> to the Lord Protector Cromwell.....	2005
Merle d'Aubigne's and John Milton on the great Oliver Cromwell.....	2006
The dying prayer and the death of the Protector Oliver Cromwell .....	2007
Assessment of Cromwell by Lingard, Clarendon and Ranke .....	2008



DETAIL TABLE OF CONTENTS

Gardiner, Guizot, Macauley, Carlyle and Gairdner on Cromwell..... 2009  
The return of the Rump and the Restoration after Cromwell’s death..... 2011  
Summary: Oliver Cromwell’s Christian Commonwealth, 1649-59 ..... 2011

**CH. 37 BRITAIN FROM THE RESTORATION AND THE “GLORIOUS  
REVOLUTION” TILL 1993 ..... 2015**  
The last years of the Stuart Dynasty in Britain (1660-1714) ..... 2015  
The Restoration of Prince Charles – as King Charles II of England..... 2016  
The beginning of the oppression of the Puritans by King Charles II ..... 2017  
The 1662 *Act of Uniformity* and the Great Ejection in Britain..... 2019  
The Puritan Sir Matthew Hale’s elevation to Lord Chief Justice of  
England ..... 2020  
The ever-increasing resistance to the tyranny of King Charles II ..... 2021  
The disastrous romanizing reign of the Romanist King James II ..... 2023  
James’s dramatic and decisive *Declaration of Indulgence* ..... 2024  
The arrival and entrenchment in Britain of King William and Queen Mary .. 2026  
The Historian Lord Macaulay’s assessment of the British *Declaration of  
Right* ..... 2028  
The *Oath of Allegiance*, the *Toleration Act*, and the *Coronation Oath*..... 2029  
The 1689 British *Bill of Rights* or the *Act for Declaring Rights and  
Liberties* ..... 2030  
The Triumph of Puritanism at the Glorious Revolution in the British Isles . 2032  
From the 1688*f* Glorious Revolution till the 1701 *Act of Settlement* ..... 2034  
The English 1702-14 Reign of the Protestant Queen Anne (Princess of  
Denmark)..... 2036  
The House of Brunswick imported from Germany for the childless British  
throne ..... 2039  
The long and epoch-making reign of George III (1760-1820)..... 2041  
Blackstone’s 1765 book on the Common Law: from Creation to the  
Reformation..... 2042  
Blackstone on the restoration of Common Law from the Reformation  
onward..... 2044  
Blackstone on Common Law, Roman Law, Civil Law, and Canon Law..... 2046  
Blackstone on the mandatory death penalty for murder and certain other  
crimes ..... 2047  
Blackstone on excellence of British Common Law above all forms of  
Roman Law ..... 2049  
Blackstone on the excellence of British Common Law above Roman Law  
(continued) ..... 2050  
Blackstone on the excellence of British Common Law above Roman Law  
(concluded)..... 2052  
William Pitt or the Earl of Chatham on the Americans’s right to be  
independent ..... 2054  
The Irishman Edmund Burke and his views on the American Revolution... 2055  
The international 1783 *Paris Peace Treaty* between Great Britain and the  
U.S.A..... 2057  
The Irishman Edmund Burke and his views on the ungodly French  
Revolution ..... 2058  
Union between Britain and Ireland and the constant extension of the  
franchise ..... 2059

England’s famous Social Scientist Walter Bagehot’s dislike of Socialism.. 2061  
 Bagehot on the respective strengths of the British and American  
 Constitutions..... 2062  
 The rise of British Socialism and its attacks against British Common Law ... 2065  
 Professor John Murray and his 1943 article *The Christian World Order*.... 2067  
 The tragedy of the Second World War – and lawlessness as its awful  
 aftermath ..... 2068  
 Queen Elizabeth II’s 1953 *Coronation Oath* and the future of the Common  
 Law ..... 2069  
 Prime Minister Margaret Thatcher’s 1988 address to the Church of  
 Scotland..... 2070  
 The roots of the Common Law still ready to bear more fruits toward 2000  
 A.D..... 2072  
Summary: Britain from the Restoration and the ‘Glorious Revolution’ till  
 1993 ..... 2073

**PART X THE DEVELOPMENT OF COMMON LAW IN AMERICA AND AUSTRALIA ..... 2075**

**CH. 38 AMERICAN COMMON LAW BEFORE THE 1776 DECLARATION OF INDEPENDENCE..... 2077**  
 The Westward Christian Colonization of North America before 999 A.D... 2077  
 The Christian colonization of North America from 1000 till 1580f..... 2079  
 The new beginnings of the British colonization of North America from  
 1583f..... 2081  
 The 1607f British ‘Pilgrims’ and their life in Holland before going to  
 America..... 2082  
 Rev. John Robinson’s speech to the Mayflower Pilgrims before they left  
 Holland..... 2084  
 The ‘Mayflower Compact’ of the British Pilgrims when on their way to  
 America..... 2085  
 The Pilgrim Fathers reject ‘the communist experiment’ made in America . 2086  
 Ongoing 1628f colonization of North America by the 17th-century Puritans... 2088  
 The 1629 *Charter of Massachusetts* and the 1632 *Charter of Maryland* .... 2090  
 The Englishman Rev. John Cotton’s 1633f theocracy in New England..... 2092  
 The 1639f Puritan-American Confederations in Connecticut and  
 Massachusetts..... 2094  
 The 1643f ‘New England Confederation’ between Connecticut and  
 Massachusetts..... 2096  
 Later Christian Codes in Massachusetts, Maryland, and Connecticut  
 (1648-55)..... 2097  
 Israeli Scholar Dr. Sivan on the massive Mosaic influences in colonial  
 America..... 2098  
 The ongoing theocratic vision in America even after the Restoration in  
 England ..... 2100  
 The creation of the first American Presbytery of the Presbyterian Church .. 2101  
 The Puritan-American predictions of Cotton Mather and Jonathan Edwards ... 2102  
 Dr. R.J. Rushdoony on the trinitarian nature of Early American  
 Government..... 2104

*DETAIL TABLE OF CONTENTS*

Blackstone’s 1765 preparation of modern American Law (and its esteem of him)..... 2107

The British *Stamp Act* of 1765 as the match which ignited America..... 2109

The crucial role of Presbyterians and Princeton in the founding of the U.S.A..... 2110

Sphere-sovereignty impelled men toward the 1776 *Declaration of Independence*..... 2112

The 1775 Oration of Massachusetts Provincial Congress President Joseph Warren..... 2114

Patrick Henry’s famous 1775 *Oration* in the Virginia Convention..... 2115

Nearly all Framers of the American Republic were not Deists but Calvinists..... 2116

The epoch-making 1775 *Mecklenburg Declaration* of North Carolina Calvinists..... 2117

The Christian background of the various State Constitutions just before 1776 ..... 2118

The God-ordained course of the 1776-81 War for American Independence.. 2119

The 1776 *Declaration of Independence* of the United States of America.... 2122

Was the American *Declaration of Independence* legal (under Common Law)? ..... 2125

Legality of the American *Declaration of Independence* (continued)..... 2127

Protestant and Presbyterian character of the *Declaration of Independence* . 2129

The Christian character of American State Constitutions since 1776 ..... 2130

The Common Law preserved in both the several States and the U.S. since 1776 ..... 2133

The War for Independence was to conserve and not to revolt against Christianity ..... 2134

The American Revolution completes British Civil War and :Glorious Revolution ~ ..... 2136

American Romanist Archbishop admits the rightness of America’s independence ..... 2137

First prayer in American Congress petitions God for victory in Christ’s Name ..... 2138

Summary of American Common Law ere the 1776 *Declaration of Independence*..... 2139

**CH. 39 THE COMMON LAW IN INDEPENDENT AMERICA TILL A.D. 1800 ..... 2143**

The 1776-77 preparation of the 1781 North American *Articles of Confederation*..... 2143

1782-83 Continental Congress President Boudinot’s *Thanksgiving Proclamation* ..... 2145

The 1783 Trinitarian *Paris Peace Treaty* between Britain and America .... 2146

The 1783f post-war peace and prosperity in independent North America ... 2148

Did the heterodox Jefferson and Franklin badly influence the U.S. Government? ..... 2149

The :adversary concept ~ in the setting up of the U.S. Government ..... 2150

The *Northwest Ordinance* just two months before the *Constitution of the U.S.*..... 2151

The early triumphs of the godly Federalists against the populist Democrats.. 2153

Immediate reasons for the 1787 *Constitution of the U.S.A.* found in its  
Article I ..... 2156  
Articles II through VII of the 1787 *Constitution of the U.S.A.* ..... 2158  
The thoroughly-Christian background of the *U.S. Constitution* ..... 2160  
Expressly Christian passages or phrases in the *U.S. Constitution*..... 2162  
The trinitarian structure and republican character of the *U.S. Constitution* . 2164  
The 1788 *Federalist Papers* on the *United States' Constitution*..... 2165  
States' provisions to secede (before ratifying the proposed *Constitution*) ... 2167  
J. Mark Jacobson's secularistic assessment of the 1787 *U.S. Constitution* .. 2168  
The Biblical and Christian and Common Law roots of the 1787 *U.S. Constitution* ..... 2169  
The Presbyterian Churches in North America until 1776..... 2170  
The Presbyterian Church in America between 1776 and 1787 ..... 2172  
The 1788-89 P.C.U.S.A. Amendments to the *W.C.F.* chapters 20 & 23 & 31.. 2173  
The 1788 P.C.U.S.A. Amendments to the *W.C.F.* at its chapter 20..... 2175  
The 1788 P.C.U.S.A. Amendments to the *W.C.F.* at its chapter 23 ..... 2177  
The 1788 P.C.U.S.A. Amendments to the *W.C.F.* chapter 23 (continued)... 2179  
Conclusion of 1788 P.C.U.S.A. Amendments to the *W.C.F.* chapters 23  
and 31 ..... 2181  
The great American Presbyterian Charles Hodge on the Magistrate in the  
*W.C.F.* ..... 2182  
Later American amendments to *W.C.F.* chs. 24 & 25 do not affect the  
Magistracy..... 2185  
The 1791 *Bill of Rights* (alias first ten amendments of the  
*U.S. Constitution*) ..... 2186  
The derivation of the 1791 American *Bill of Rights* from the Common Law. 2191  
The Common Law derivation of the true original meaning of the First  
Amendment ..... 2193  
Detailed analysis of the much-misrepresented First Amendment of 1791 ... 2195  
The searching First Amendment views of Professor Dr. L. John Van Til... 2197  
Biblical nature of 1776 *Declaration*, 1787 *Constitution*, and 1791 *Bill of Rights* ..... 2199  
The overwhelming Christian commitment of the first U.S. Presidents ..... 2200  
Summary: Common Law in Independent America till the end of the 18th  
Century..... 2203

**CH. 40 U.S. COMMON LAW DURING THE 19TH AND 20TH CENTURIES ..... 2207**  
The tension in American Judgments during the nineteenth and twentieth  
centuries ..... 2208  
Early American Judgments on the Christian Common Law character of  
the U.S.A..... 2209  
The Christian Common Law viewpoint of Chancellor and Chief Justice  
James Kent ..... 2210  
The Christian Common Law views of U.S. Supreme Court Justice Joseph  
Story..... 2212  
1837f North-South tensions begin warping Christianity and U.S. Common  
Law ..... 2213  
The constitutional right of the several States to secede from the U.S.A. .... 2214

*DETAIL TABLE OF CONTENTS*

The 1825 Northerner William Rawle (LL.D.) on the nature of the <i>Constitution</i> .....	2217
Dr. Rawle on the nature of the <i>Bill of Rights</i> in the <i>U.S. Constitution</i> .....	2218
Dr. Rawle on the right of the States to secede under the <i>U.S. Constitution</i> ..	2220
The right of States to secede never challenged even from 1835 till 1861 ....	2221
Causes of the 1861-65 War of Northern Aggression against the Southern U.S.A.....	2223
Robert E. Lee’s assessment of Lincoln’s unconstitutional and unethical actions .....	2226
Thornwell on the 1861 <i>Constitution of the Confederate States of America</i> .	2227
Dabney on the War of Northern Aggression against the <i>U.S. Constitution</i> ..	2230
Dabney on historic capital punishments against the humanism of the North .	2231
The prostitution of the <i>U.S. Constitution</i> following the rape of the South ...	2234
The rape of the <i>Constitution</i> itself after the reconstruction of the South.....	2236
Christian statesmanship by great Northern Calvinists to heal the torn nation..	2238
Rousing call unto Christian conquest by the Northern Presbyterian A.A. Hodge .....	2240
Christian statesmanship of the Northern Calvinists A.A. Hodge & R.S. Storrs.....	2242
U.S. Common Law at the end of the 19th and start of the 20th centuries ....	2243
Apostasy from the Common Law in the U.S. Supreme Court since the mid-1950’s .....	2246
Law Professor Berman & President Ronald Reagan on America’s Biblical heritage.....	2249
The bicentennial signs of the times (alias time for <i>Time</i> to change) .....	2251
<i>Time</i> marches on – but not fast enough for Law Professor Laurence Tribe .	2253
<u>Summary</u> : U.S. Common Law during the nineteenth and twentieth centuries .....	2256
<b>CH. 41 THE COMMON LAW IN AUSTRALIA FROM A.D. 1788 TO 1993 ..</b>	<b>2259</b>
The American Rev. Dr. Jonathan Edwards’s 1739 predictions about Australasia.....	2259
From the first Britons who reached till the first who colonized Australia....	2262
The beginning of the transportation of convicts from Britain to Australia...	2263
The Britons brought their Common Law with them to Australia in 1788....	2265
Australia’s first dayschools were specifically Christian Dayschools .....	2267
The godly Governors of New South Wales Lauchlin Macquarie and Thomas Brisbane .....	2269
The first colonization of Tasmania not with revelry but with worship .....	2270
Modified British Christian Common Law the only legal system of Australia .....	2271
The 1823 establishment of a Legislative Council in Australia .....	2273
Common Law remained in Australia after cut-off date for fresh British Statutes.....	2274
The great influence in Australia of the renowned Presbyterian Rev. Dr. Lang .....	2276
The influence of Christianity on Australian life from 1860 to 1875f.....	2278
The influence of Christianity on Australian Law even since 1884 .....	2280
Role of the Presbyterian Church in promoting confederation within Australia .....	2282

British and U.S. influences toward the 1901 <i>Australian Constitution</i> .....	2284
Fifty years of movement toward political federation in Australia .....	2286
The 1901 <i>Constitution of the Commonwealth of Australia</i> (as then framed)..	2289
Is the 1901 <i>Constitution of the Commonwealth of Australia</i> really Christian? .....	2292
Australia's 1st Amendment: Section 116 of the <i>Constitution</i> .....	2295
Christian background of Section 116 of the <i>Australian Constitution</i> .....	2298
Characterization of the 1901 <i>Constitution of the Commonwealth of Australia</i> .....	2300
Papuan Native Law <i>vis-a-vis</i> Australian Common Law in 1906-1908 .....	2301
Australia's Judge Murphy on Australia's Common Law before and since 1901 .....	2303
The significance of the adoption of the Australia flag in 1903 .....	2305
The 1943 <i>Jehovah's Witnesses case</i> and Section 116 of the <i>Constitution</i> ....	2308
The 1953 Christian Coronation of the present Queen of Australia .....	2310
Lapses from Christian Common Law in Britain & America & Australia since 1964.....	2312
Judge Murphy's revisionistic understanding of Common Law and the rule of law .....	2314
The conservatism of the High Court of Australia till the early 1980s.....	2317
Tensions and the rise of leftism in the High Court of Australia since 1980.	2318
The ongoing pressure upon Australia to adopt a humanistic "Bill of Rights".	2320
The Human Rights and the Human Rights and Equal Opportunity Commissions .....	2323
Growing grass-roots disillusionment with trends away from the Common Law .....	2324
The heroic and trinitarian stand of the Presbyterian Church of Australia ....	2326
The 1992 EARC <i>Review of the...Enhancement of...Rights and Freedoms</i> ...	2328
The 1992-93 Queensland Presbyterian Response to the 1992 EARC Paper on Rights .....	2331
A closer consideration of the 1992 <i>Mabo case</i> in the light of the Common Law .....	2333
So even after <i>Mabo</i> - back to Blackstone and the Common Law! .....	2335
Keating's April 1993 <i>Evatt Lecture</i> : toward a Mabo-type Republic?.....	2337
Historic Australian Common Law vs. the various <i>UN Declarations</i> .....	2339
<u>Summary</u> : The Common Law in Australia from 1788 to 1993 .....	2340
<u>Conclusions</u> about the Common Law and its future in Australia.....	2343

<b>CH. 42 CONCLUSIONS ABOUT THE ROOTS AND FRUITS OF OUR COMMON LAW .....</b>	<b>2347</b>
Part I - Prolegomena to the Common Law .....	2347
Part II - The Biblical and Historical Background of the Common Law .....	2348
1. The Roots of Law and of Legal Rights .....	2348
2. The Biblical Data concerning the Common Law .....	2351
3. Christocracy before Constantine: Christ's Law Withstood! .....	2354
4. Christocracy after Constantine: Christ's Law Recognized!.....	2355
Part III - The Development of Common Law in Pre-Christian Britain .....	2356
5. Common Law among the very Ancient Migrants to the British Isles .	2357
6. Common Law among the Ancient Irish after B.C. 2600 .....	2358
7. Common Law in Britain from B.C. 1800 till B.C. 1000.....	2360

*DETAIL TABLE OF CONTENTS*

8. Common Law in Britain and Eurasia from 1000 to 100 B.C.....	2363
9. British Common Law during the First Century B.C.....	2365
Part IV ~ Christian British Law before the Anglo-Saxon Invasion.....	2367
10. Britain Evangelized by Judean Christians from 35f A.D.....	2368
11. Britons, Christianizing, resist the Pagan Romans (A.D. 43-87f).....	2370
12. The growth of British Christianity from A.D. 43 till 100 .....	2371
13. Britain becomes Christian in the Second Century A.D. ....	2374
14. Christian Britain, 200-320 A.D., overthrows Rome's Paganism .....	2375
15. British Common Law from Constantine to Saint Patrick .....	2377
Part V ~ The British Celts Christianize Anglo-Saxon Common Law .....	2380
16. Rome Withdraws from and the Early Anglo-Saxons Arrive in Britain .....	2380
17. Christian Britain survives A.D. 429-500 Non-Christian Saxon Attacks .....	2381
18. Sixth-century Christian Britain from King Arthur to Rome's Austin .	2383
19. The Christianization of Southeast England from Kent to Wight .....	2385
20. The Northern Anglo-Saxons christianized in Northumbria and Mercia.....	2387
21. Wessex the Embryo of Christian England's United Kingdom.....	2389
Part VI ~ British Common Law: from Alfred to the Reformation .....	2391
22. England's `Good King Alfred` and his Biblical Laws.....	2391
23. English Common Law from Edward the Elder to Edward the Confessor .....	2393
24. Anglo-Norman Common Law from the <i>Domesday Book</i> to <i>Magna Carta</i> .....	2394
25. English Law from King John's death to the Protestant Reformation..	2395
Part VII ~ English Law: Reformation to Puritan Parliaments.....	2397
26. The Decalogical Anti-Romish Reformers: Luther, Zwingli and Calvin.....	2398
27. The use of the Mosaic Laws by Calvin, Bullinger, Beza & De Bres ..	2399
28. The Protestantization of Tudor England (1531 to 1603) .....	2400
29. King James I and Christian Britain's Puritanization, 1603-25.....	2402
30. Puritanism during the Early Reign of King Charles I, 1625-1642 ....	2403
Part VIII ~ Common Law's Impact on Westminster Puritanism .....	2404
31. The Commissioning and Convening of the Westminster Assembly .	2405
32. The <i>Westminster Shorter</i> and <i>Larger Catechisms</i> on Government ...	2406
33. The Governmental Implications of the <i>Westminster Confession</i> .....	2407
34. The Political Impact of Other Westminster Standards .....	2408
Part IX ~ The Post-Westminster Common Law in England .....	2410
35. Romanizers vs. Protesters: 1642-49 Religious Wars in Britain .....	2410
36. Oliver Cromwell's Christian Commonwealth, 1649-59 .....	2411
37. Britain from the Restoration and the `Glorious Revolution` till 1993 .....	2413
Part X ~ The Development of Common Law in America and Australia.....	2415
38. American Common Law ere the 1776 <i>Declaration of Independence</i> .	2415
39. The Common Law in Independent America till A.D. 1800.....	2417
40. U.S. Common Law during the 19th and 20th Centuries.....	2418
41. The Common Law in Australia from A.D. 1788 to 1993 .....	2420
42. Conclusions about the Roots and Fruits of Our Common Law .....	2422

<b>EPILOGUE .....</b>	<b>2425</b>
God the Creator, His creation, His image, and His law .....	2425
Coke on Common Law, the Law of Nature, Brut, Mulmutius, & the Druids.....	2425
Caesar, Diodorus, Strabo, Pliny & Juvenal on Ancient British Druids .....	2427
Blackstone on God’s creation, on Tacitus, on Alfred, and on Selden .....	2428
Coke & Blackstone: <i>Magna Carta</i> as affirmative not constitutive .....	2429
Prime Minister Margaret Thatcher on Christianity and the laws of Britain.....	2430
Blackstone on Britain’s Colonies like America (and Australia) .....	2431
American Judges on Christianity as the Root of the Common Law.....	2432
Australian Law Professor Lumb on <i>Magna Carta</i> , Blackstone and Australia.....	2434
Australian Judges on Christianity as part of our Common Law.....	2436
Australia’s Constitution, the <i>Coronation Oath</i> , and Christianity .....	2437
<i>Eddie Mabo’s case</i> , Blackstone, and Australia’s Common Law.....	2439
Triumphant future of the Common Law here on our own great planet Earth.....	2440
<b>ADDENDA FOR THE FURTHER STUDY OF THE COMMON LAW .....</b>	<b>2443</b>
<b>ADD. 1 BLACKSTONE ON THE HISTORY OF BRITISH COMMON</b>	
<b>LAW.....</b>	<b>2445</b>
The life and times of Sir William Blackstone.....	2445
Blackstone on God’s Laws of Nature for His universe .....	2446
Blackstone on God’s Laws of Nature for His image man .....	2447
Blackstone on the laws of migration and possession .....	2448
Blackstone on the need to heed God’s special revelation.....	2449
Blackstone on the rise of the Law of Nations & Civil Law .....	2450
Blackstone on man’s unalienable :natural rights~ .....	2451
Blackstone on Ancient Celto-Brythonic Common Law .....	2451
Blackstone on Common Law in first-century Ancient Germany.....	2453
Blackstone on Common Law in England’s Mercia and Wessex .....	2454
Blackstone on the growth of Christian-Saxon Common Law .....	2455
Blackstone on the growth of one Common Law for England .....	2456
Blackstone on the origins of the English Parliament .....	2458
Blackstone on the Normans’ inability to oust Common Law .....	2460
Blackstone on mediaeval-papal infringements of Common Law .....	2462
Blackstone on restoration of Common Law at <i>Magna Carta</i> .....	2463
Blackstone: Common Law from <i>Magna Carta</i> to the Reformation .....	2465
Blackstone: Common Law under the blessed reign of King Edward VI ...	2466
Blackstone: Common Law under the reign of Queen Elizabeth I.....	2467
Blackstone on tyranny of the Stuart Kings till Charles II.....	2468
Blackstone on triumph of the Common Law against James II .....	2469
Blackstone on entrenchment of Common Law since William III.....	2470
Blackstone’s recapitulation of the history of the Common Law.....	2471
Blackstone’s application of Common Law to Overseas Colonies .....	2472
Blackstone on the best of all possible kinds of government.....	2473
Blackstone’s authority in Australia from 1788 till today .....	2474



<b>ADD. 2</b>	<b>BLACKSTONE ON THE SUPERIORITY OF BRITISH TO ROMAN LAW</b> .....	<b>2477</b>
	Blackstone’s distinguishing of Roman from British Common Law .....	2477
	Blackstone’s attitude to Roman Civil and Romish Canon Law.....	2478
	Blackstone on the roots and fruits of the Roman Law .....	2479
	Blackstone: British Common Law of Persons vs. that of Rome.....	2480
	Blackstone: British Common Law of Marriage vs. that of Rome.....	2482
	Blackstone: British Common Law of Inheritance vs. Rome’s.....	2483
	Blackstone: British Common Law of Things vs. that of Rome .....	2485
	Blackstone: British Common Law of Torts vs. that of Rome.....	2486
	Blackstone: British Common Law of Litigation vs. Rome’s.....	2488
	Blackstone: British Common Law of Crimes vs. that of Rome.....	2490
	Blackstone: British Law on Manslaughter & Suicide vs. Rome’s .....	2491
	Blackstone: British Law on Rape & Kidnapping vs. Rome’s.....	2492
	Blackstone: British Law vs. Rome’s on Cruel Punishments .....	2493
	Blackstone: British Common Law of Accountability vs. Rome’s .....	2494
	Blackstone: British vs. Roman Law on Religious Apostasy .....	2495
	Blackstone: British Law vs. Rome on Lesser Religious Offences.....	2496
	Blackstone: British vs. Roman Law on Unnatural Sex Crimes .....	2497
<b>ADD. 3</b>	<b>THE B.C. BACKGROUND OF THE ANCIENT BRITISH ISLANDERS</b> .....	<b>2499</b>
	The earliest post-flood populating of the British Isles .....	2499
	The <i>Encyclopaedia Britannica</i> on Early-Celtic Archaeology .....	2500
	The B.C. 60 Diodorus Siculus on the Celts in the British Isles .....	2501
	The A.D. 98 Tacitus on other kinfolk of the Britons and the Irish .....	2501
	:Albion’s the B.C. ancient name for the island of Britain.....	2502
	The <i>Encyclopaedia Britannica</i> on Ancient Britain .....	2502
	The <i>Encyclopedia Americana</i> on Ancient Britain.....	2503
	Paul Herrmann on religion in the Ancient British Isles.....	2504
	Herrmann on the international importance of tin in Ancient Britain .....	2505
	<i>Americana &amp; Britannica</i> on Cymri/Cambria/Cumberland/Cumbria .....	2506
	The <i>Britannica</i> and the <i>Americana</i> on Tyre .....	2507
	The <i>Encyclopedia Americana</i> on Phoenicia .....	2508
	The <i>Britannica</i> and Josephus and Justin Martyr on Phoenicia .....	2509
	Ancient Greek Historians on the western :Tin-and-Gold Islands’s.....	2510
	<i>American Peoples’ Encyclopedia</i> on Phoenicians & Carthaginians.....	2513
	Further evidence of Phoenician visits to Ancient Britain.....	2513
	Did the Trojans have contact with Ancient Britain? .....	2514
	Vergil’s <i>Aeneid</i> on the Ancient Trojans and Ancient Carthage.....	2514
	The dialogue between Aeneas of Troy and the Carthaginians .....	2515
	The <i>Encyclopaedia Britannica</i> on Troy and Ancient Britain .....	2516
	Michael Wood’s <i>In Search of the Trojan War &amp; Ancient Britain</i> .....	2517
	Wood on the connection between the Trojans and the Hittites.....	2519
	Records preserved elsewhere: despite Britain’s damp climate .....	2519
	Caesar, Strabo, Suetonius & Tacitus on Ancient Britain.....	2520
	<u>Summary</u> of the B.C. background of the Ancient British Islanders.....	2521
	<u>Conclusions</u> about the Ancient British Islanders .....	2522

<b>ADD. 4</b>	<b>CIMMERIANS, SCYTHIANS, SACAE AND THE ANCIENT BRITISH ISLES .....</b>	<b>2525</b>
	<i>Milesian Pedigree and Cashel Psalter: Irish were Magogian Scythians ...</i>	2525
	The Crimean Cimmerians ~ move toward the <i>:Cassiterides~</i> .....	2526
	<i>Cassiterides</i> were located in the South of the British Isles.....	2526
	Tacitus's `Britons_ were the descendants of Homer's `Cimmerians_.....	2528
	Holy Scripture and Rieu on Homer's Dan-aans and Darda-nians .....	2529
	Details in Homer himself on the Darda-nians and the Dan-aans .....	2530
	The importance of Herodotus and his testimony to Early History.....	2531
	Herodotus's testimony regarding the Ancient Cimmerians.....	2532
	Herodotus's testimony about the Scythians and the Hypoboreans .....	2533
	The <i>Orphic Argonaut</i> , Posidonius & Diodorus on Cimmerians.....	2534
	Strabo and Prof. A.H. Sayce on the Ancient Cimmerians.....	2535
	A.J. Woodhouse and Prof. J.B. Bury on the Ancient Cimmerians .....	2536
	Encyclopedias <i>Britannica</i> and <i>Americana</i> on the Ancient Cimmerians ...	2537
	Rev. Commander L.G.A. Roberts: the Cimmerians were Celtic.....	2538
	Various theologians: the Cymric were akin to the Galatians.....	2540
	The ancient Herodotus on the Ancient-Scythians .....	2541
	Herodotus on the Ancient-Scythians (continued) .....	2542
	Encyclopedias <i>Britannica</i> and <i>Americana</i> on the Ancient-Scyths.....	2543
	Anacharsis the Scythian and the men of Olbia in the Ukraine .....	2544
	The beginning of the christianization of the Scythians .....	2545
	Some Scythians came to embrace Christ before some Romans did .....	2546
	Were the <i>Sakka</i> or <i>Saka</i> or <i>Sacae</i> the Saxons or Proto-Saxons?.....	2547
	<i>Hastings's Encyclopaedia</i> and Strabo on <i>Saka</i> and Scythians .....	2548
	<i>Encyclopaedia Britannica</i> on the <i>Saka</i> and on the Scythians.....	2549
	The <i>Britannica</i> and Rev. Dr. Goard on the Ancient-Saxons .....	2549
	Rev. Commander Roberts & Dr. Sharon Turner on the Ancient-Saxons... 2550	
	The Scythian origin of the Ancient-Picts of Northern Scot-land.....	2551
	The <i>Americana</i> on the Picts & the Caledonians & the Brythons.....	2551
	The origin of the Scots and their various later movements .....	2552
	The <i>Historians' History</i> on Pre-Christian Ancient Ireland.....	2552
	The <i>Historians' History</i> on the Irish in Ancient Britain.....	2554
	<i>Historians' History</i> on the Brython's Christian impact on Ireland.....	2555
	<i>Historians' History</i> on how the Church preserved Ancient-Irish culture ..	2556
	<i>Historians' History</i> on Scotland and her christianization.....	2557
	Bede on arrival of Brythons & Scots & Picts in the British Isles .....	2558
<b>ADD. 5</b>	<b>LLUYD ON THE ANCIENT IRISH AND THE SUBSEQUENT BRITONS.....</b>	<b>2561</b>
	Lluyd on Ireland's Early-Picts and Iro-Scots.....	2561
	Lluyd on the arrival of Early-Celts from Ireland in Britain.....	2561
	Lluyd on (H)Iberian or Spanish influence on the Early British Isles .....	2562
	Lluyd on the previous occupation of Britain by the Irish Picts .....	2562
	Lluyd on the Celtic character of the Picts in Ireland and Britain.....	2563
<b>ADD. 6</b>	<b>DR. PARSONS ON THE REMAINS OF JAPHET .....</b>	<b>2565</b>
	Parsons claimed Adam was literate and so too Japheth and his sons.....	2565
	Japhethites and Israelites both got knowledge from antediluvians .....	2565
	The Ancient Britons and the Ancient Irish were sons of Japheth.....	2566

*DETAIL TABLE OF CONTENTS*

Japhethitic Magogian Irish were highly poetic and most musical .....	2567
Japhethitic Gomer's early descendants in Asia and Europe .....	2568
Early Gomerian and Scythian settlements in the British Isles .....	2569
Earliest religion and culture of Celtic migrants to British Isles .....	2570
Ancestry of the Irish from Noah till after the tower of Babel.....	2571
Migrations to Ancient Ireland from Egypt <i>via</i> Celtiberian Spain .....	2572
Ancient Britons and Irish long preserved primordial religion .....	2573
Scythians did not derive their eschatology from the Pythagoreans .....	2574
Long lists of intellectuals among Early-Britons and Early-Irish .....	2575
Dr. Parsons on the Irish High-King Ollamh Fodhla and his laws.....	2576
Harmony between the Ancient-Irish and the Bible regarding the sons of Noah.....	2577
Dr. Parsons on the various Celtic migrations to Ancient Ireland.....	2578
Dr. Parsons on migrations from Ancient Ireland into Scotland.....	2579
<b>ADD. 7 SIR HENRY MAINE ON THE ANTIQUITY OF CELTIC LAW .....</b>	<b>2581</b>
Presuppositions in Maine's approach to ancient legal history.....	2581
Importance of Ancient-Irish Family Law & Ancient-Irish Brehon Law....	2581
Maine's career helped him grasp Early-Irish Law was Proto-Aryan.....	2582
Patrick's codification of Early-Irish Law in the <i>Senchus Mor</i> .....	2583
Maine on druidic <i>brehons</i> or judges under Ancient-Irish Law .....	2583
The scope of Ireland's ancient legal tracts published in 1865 .....	2584
Relation among Aryo-Indian, Ancient-Irish & Ancient-Germanic Laws ..	2585
Sir Henry Maine on the Ancient-Irish Law of Property .....	2586
Sir Henry Maine and Dr. Sullivan on Ancient-Irish <i>Geilfine</i> .....	2588
Comparison of Ancient-Irish <i>Geilfine</i> with Ancient-Welsh <i>Tygdyn</i> .....	2589
Irish Tribes, Families, Extended & Adopting Families, & Guilds.....	2590
Maine on the Ancient-Irish 'Religious House' and <i>Gossipred</i> .....	2590
Maine on Ancient-Irish Fosterage or <i>Oileamhain</i> .....	2591
Impact of <i>Gossipred</i> and <i>Oileamhain</i> in the Early Church .....	2591
Ancient-Irish legal remedies essentially those of Germanic Law.....	2592
Maine on the common ancestry of both Irish Law and English Law.....	2592
<b>ADD. 8 STONEHENGE AND THE ANCIENT-BRITISH DRUIDS .....</b>	<b>2593</b>
Rev. R.W. Morgan & Gladys Taylor on the origin of Druidism .....	2593
Origin of Britain's druidic stone circles, knives & oak-groves .....	2594
Rev. Matthew Henry on oak-groves from Abraham to Calvary.....	2594
Dr. Sir James G. Frazer on Druidism and druidic oak-trees .....	2596
Josephus & Eusebius & Sozomen & Frazer on Abraham's oaks .....	2597
The significance of Stonehenge and its druidic tri-liths .....	2598
The B.C. 60 Diodorus on the druids of the British Isles .....	2599
The A.D. 23f Pliny on the druids and their oaks and religion .....	2600
Druidic sacrifices and their killing of convicted criminals.....	2601
The medical uses of mistletoe in Ancient-British Druidism.....	2602
The <i>Americana</i> and the <i>Britannica</i> on Stonehenge & Druidism .....	2602
Norton-Taylor on the druidic religion of the Early Western Celts .....	2603
<i>Reader's Digest History</i> on the structures in Wiltshire & Dorset.....	2604
Hadingham on the multi-functional purposes of Stonehenge.....	2605
Rev. Commander L.G.A. Roberts on the nature of druidic religion.....	2607
Rev. R.W. Morgan on the patriarchal origin of Early-British Druidism....	2608

Rev. R.W. Morgan on primordial roots of Early-British Druidism .....	2609
Rev. R.W. Morgan on the testimony about Early-British Druidism.....	2610
Rev. Morgan on international influence of Early-British Druidism .....	2610
Rev. R.W. Morgan on the teaching of the druids in Early Britain.....	2611
Rev. Morgan on the intense religiosity of Early-British Druidism.....	2611
Isabel Elder on the dominance of Druidism in Early Britain.....	2612
Isabel Elder on the antagonism of Roman Paganism toward Druidism.....	2613
Rev. Dr. J.A. McCulloch on Druidism (in <i>Hastings's Encyclopaedia</i> ) .....	2615
Rev. Dr. J.A. McCulloch on classical sources about the druids .....	2616
Rev. Dr. McCulloch on the knowledge and activities of the druids .....	2617
Dean Page and writers on Druidism and the Bible and Christianity.....	2618
Rev. Prof. Dr. Hugh Williams on Druidism and Christianity.....	2618
Dr. Diana Leatham on Celtic Druidism and Celtic Christianity .....	2619
Celsus & Origen insisted `most learned` druids resembled Jews .....	2620
<b>ADD. 9 SURVEY OF DR. PIGGOTT'S BOOK <i>THE DRUIDS</i> .....</b>	<b>2621</b>
Dr. Piggott on the archeological interpretation of the druids.....	2621
The Danube an Early-Celtic waterway from Cimmeria to Celtica .....	2622
Piggott on the B.C. 130f Posidonius's description of the druids .....	2623
Piggott on Mediterranean sources about druids since Diodorus.....	2623
Piggott on Early-Celtic sources about druidic life and work.....	2624
Pan-European recognition of the stature of the Celtic druids .....	2625
Dr. Piggott on the religious views of the Celtic druids .....	2626
Dr. Piggott on the Celts's druidic knowledge of astronomy .....	2627
Dr. Piggott on Pagan-Roman opposition to Celtic druidism .....	2628
Rowlands and Dickinson and Lluyd on the druids of Britain.....	2629
Dr. Piggott on the connection between the druids and Stonehenge .....	2629
Postdiluvian export of Druidism to Britain from the tents of Shem .....	2630
<b>ADD. 10 SOME ASPECTS OF THE 'BRITISH-ISRAEL' THEORY .....</b>	<b>2633</b>
Roots of British-Israel theory already in Gildas and in Sadler .....	2633
British-Israel on the Danite-Danaan-Danube-Danish connection.....	2634
The <i>Britannica</i> , Euripides, Strabo, <i>Judaica</i> & Yigael Yadin on Dan .....	2635
Migrations of Danites, Trojans, Danaan and Danes to British Isles .....	2636
Danmark or Denmark and the <i>Danaoi</i> and the Israelitic Danites .....	2636
Were the Cimmerians and Scythians and Saxons in fact Israelites?.....	2637
What became of the Israelites after their exile in Assyria? .....	2639
British-Israel's equation of post-exilic Israel with Anglo-Saxons .....	2640
Did Israelites move from Assyria northwestward through Caucasus?.....	2641
British-Israel on the `Habiru-Hebrew` theory of Ancient Israel.....	2642
Huns propelled Scythian-Saxon `Israelites` from Europe to Britain .....	2643
British-Israel claims that Jeremiah migrated to Ireland.....	2644
The British-Israelite Tom Foster's book <i>Britain's Royal Throne</i> .....	2644
British-Israel claims of Hebrew settlements in Ancient Britain .....	2645
British-Israel on links between Scythian Olbia and British Albion .....	2646
British-Israelite Tom Foster claims Britain & U.S.A. are `Israel` .....	2647
<u>Own summary</u> evaluation of `British-Israel` & `Destiny of America` & `Identity` .....	2649

DETAIL TABLE OF CONTENTS

**ADD. 11 ANCIENT BRITONS, CELTS & GERMANS IN DIODORUS & JULIUS CAESAR ..... 2651**  
Diodorus on Ancient Britain in the days of the B.C. 525 Hecataeus ..... 2651  
Diodorus Siculus on the politics and economics of Ancient Britain..... 2652  
Diodorus on the Britons` mining and transportation of Cornish tin ..... 2652  
Diodorus on the religion and clothing of the Ancient Britons..... 2653  
Diodorus on kinship among Britons & Irish & Cimbrians & Cimmerians .. 2653  
Julius Caesar`s overall impression of Britain & Germany (B.C. 58f)..... 2654  
Julius Caesar`s description of Britain`s economy and militia ..... 2655  
Julius Caesar on the able & intellectual druids in Celtic Britain ..... 2656  
Julius Caesar on the religious views of Britain`s Celtic druids ..... 2657  
Caesar`s description of Celtic *Belgae* and of Ancient-Germans..... 2658  
Caesar on the navies of the Britons and of their cousins the *Veneti* ..... 2660  
Caesar`s description of his first thwarted invasion of Britain..... 2661  
Caesar`s description of his second thwarted invasion of Britain ..... 2663  
Caesar on the Britons` literacy and their war-caumoflage ..... 2664  
Caesar on the pre-eminence of the Britons among the other Celts ..... 2665

**ADD. 12 STRABO, PLINY & JOSEPHUS: BRITONS, CELTS, GERMANS, JEWS & ROME ..... 2667**  
Life and times of the Greek Historian Strabo (B.C. 64 to A.D. 19)..... 2667  
Strabo the Greek on Britons and Irish and Celts and their druids..... 2667  
The A.D. 23-79 life and times of the Elder Pliny from Celtic Gaul ..... 2669  
The Elder Pliny on the practices and beliefs of Celtic Druidism..... 2669  
The Elder Pliny on the tin trade from Ancient Britain`s Cornwall ..... 2670  
The life and times of the Jewish Historian Josephus (A.D. 37-95)..... 2670  
Josephus on Noah`s blessing to Japheth and his sons Gomer & Magog.... 2671  
Josephus on the identity of the Japhethitic Gomerians & Magogites ..... 2672  
Josephus on the death of Jesus the Christ under Pontius Pilate ..... 2674  
Josephus on Herod`s punishment for rejecting John (and Jesus)..... 2675  
Josephus on Herod Agrippa the First and the Pagan Roman Emperor Tiberius ..... 2675  
Josephus on Caius Caesar alias the Pagan Roman Emperor Caligula ..... 2676  
Josephus on the German bodyguards of Caligula (and his murder)..... 2677  
Josephus on Pagan Rome`s Priest and Emperor Claudius (A.D. 41ff) ..... 2678  
Josephus on the multi-murderous Pagan Emperor Nero (A.D. 54-68) ..... 2679  
Josephus on the Judaists` murder of Jesus Christ`s brother James ..... 2680  
Josephus`s :Preface` in his book on the A.D. 63-70 *Jewish War* ..... 2680  
Agrippa warned the Jews that the Romans had attacked the Britons and Germans ..... 2681  
Josephus on the Roman siege of apostate Jerusalem in A.D. 66-70 ..... 2682  
Josephus on Roman General Titus`s final siege of dying Jerusalem ..... 2684  
Josephus on Titus`s praying down the wrath of God against the Jews ..... 2685  
The Roman burning of the temple despite the Jews` false prophecies..... 2686  
Titus`s final warning to Jews: Rome had conquered even the Britons ..... 2687  
Greatest holocaust ever: the A.D. 63-70 destruction of Jerusalem ..... 2688  
Josephus on the parading of the Jews and their spoils in Rome ..... 2689  
Josephus on the A.D. 73 Roman destruction of the Jews at Masada ..... 2689  
That violent generation and its `Great Tribulation` of A.D. 63-70 ..... 2690

<b>ADD. 13 SUETONIUS ON THE 1ST-CENTURY B.C. &amp; A.D. PAGAN ROMAN EMPIRE.....</b>	<b>2693</b>
The life and times of the Roman Historian Suetonius (A.D. 69-140).....	2693
Suetonius on the Pagan Roman Emperor Julius Caesar (B.C. 60-44).....	2693
Suetonius on the Pagan Roman Emperor Augustus (B.C. 27 - A.D. 14) ...	2694
Suetonius on the Pagan Roman Emperor Tiberius (A.D. 14-37).....	2695
Suetonius on the Pagan Roman Emperor Caius Caligula (A.D. 37-41).....	2696
Suetonius on the Pagan Roman Emperor Claudius (A.D. 41-54).....	2697
The A.D. 63-70 :Great Tribulation~ throughout the then-known World....	2698
Suetonius on the Pagan Roman Emperor Nero (A.D. 54-68).....	2699
Suetonius on the Pagan Roman Emperor Galba (A.D. 68-69) .....	2700
Suetonius on the Pagan Roman Emperor Otho (A.D. 69).....	2700
Suetonius on the Pagan Roman Emperor Vitellius (A.D. 69) .....	2701
Suetonius on the Pagan Roman Emperor Vespasian (A.D. 69-79).....	2702
Suetonius on the Pagan Roman Emperor Titus (A.D. 79-81).....	2703
Suetonius on the first rule of the Pagan Roman Domitian (A.D. 69f) .....	2704
Suetonius on the Roman Domitian's rule as Sole Emperor (A.D. 81f).....	2705
Suetonius on the murder of the Pagan Roman Domitian (in A.D. 96).....	2706
Similarity between King Herod and the first twelve Roman Caesars .....	2706
<b>ADD. 14 TACITUS ON BRITAIN AND EURASIA IN THE 1ST CENTURY</b>	
<b>A.D. ....</b>	<b>2709</b>
Life and times of the Historian Cornelius Tacitus (A.D. 55-117) .....	2709
Outline of the major works of the Historian Cornelius Tacitus .....	2709
Ethical thrust of and moral motivation in the writings of Tacitus .....	2710
Valuable yet fragmentary nature of the extant works of Tacitus.....	2711
Historian Tacitus on the B.C. Roman Emperors Julius & Augustus .....	2712
Historian Tacitus on the Roman Emperor Tiberius (A.D. 14-37).....	2713
Nothing extant from the Historian Tacitus on years A.D. 37-47 .....	2714
Historian Tacitus on the middle of the reign of Claudius (A.D. 47-50).....	2714
Historian Tacitus on the exploits of the Briton Prince Caradoc.....	2714
Historian Tacitus on the captured Briton Prince Caradoc in Rome .....	2715
Historian Tacitus on British events after the capture of Caradoc .....	2716
Historian Tacitus on prodigies in Rome during years A.D. 53-54.....	2716
Historian Tacitus on the accession of Pagan Emperor Nero in A.D. 54 ....	2717
Historian Tacitus on the British Christian the Lady Pomponia .....	2717
Tacitus on the coming of :Great Tribulation~ throughout the World.....	2718
Roman Paullinus's burning of the Druids~ Seminary on Anglesey .....	2718
Roman mistreatments of the British Chieftainess Boadicea and her daughters .....	2719
Britons destroy Pagan Roman garrisons in the cities of Britain .....	2720
The Romans~ battle against the British Chieftainess Boadicea in 62 A.D. ....	2720
Tacitus on the Roman Emperor Nero's increasing cruelty (A.D. 62-64)... ..	2721
The Christians blamed for the Emperor Nero's own burning of Rome ....	2721
Tacitus's assessment of the closing years of Nero's reign (A.D. 64f) .....	2722
Tacitus's <i>History</i> summarized the A.D. 68-70 period after Nero .....	2722
Tacitus on the A.D. 68f reigns of Galba Caesar and Otho Caesar.....	2723
The Historian Tacitus on the reign of Vitellius Caesar (A.D. 69) .....	2724
Tacitus on events in the East from March till August in 69 A.D.....	2724
Tacitus on the grand showdown between Otho Caesar and Vitellius .....	2725

DETAIL TABLE OF CONTENTS

Tacitus on Otho's suicide and the new Emperor Vitellius (A.D. 69) ..... 2726  
Tacitus on Vespasian's clever preparations to challenge Vitellius ..... 2727  
Tacitus on the Mt. Carmel prediction that Vespasian would triumph..... 2728  
Vitellius Caesar's belated occupation of Rome was not consolidated ..... 2728  
The Roman Civil War encouraged further revolts in *Britannia* ..... 2729  
The downfall of Vitellius at the end of the 'Great Tribulation' ..... 2729  
Domitian takes over Rome on behalf of his father Vespasian Caesar ..... 2731  
Tacitus on the history and beliefs and demise of the Judeans ..... 2732  
Tacitus on the Roman attacks on Judeans from B.C. 63 to A.D. 70 ..... 2733  
Tacitus on his father-in-law Agricola's rule over *Britannia*..... 2735  
Tacitus on Rome's interest in Britain's riches and her many tribes..... 2736  
Tacitus on the history of Rome's clashes with the Ancient-Britons ..... 2737  
Ancient-Britons defended their property bravely against the Romans ..... 2738  
Tacitus on the precursors of the Roman-Caledonian War of A.D. 83f..... 2739  
Tacitus on Roman Agricola's decisive battle against Caledonians..... 2740  
Roman Tacitus's description of the origin of the Ancient-Germans..... 2740  
Tacitus on military and political organization of Ancient-Germans ..... 2741  
The Roman historian Tacitus on the religion of the Ancient-Germans..... 2741  
The thoroughly-representative government of the Ancient-Germans..... 2742  
Tacitus on the highly-moral social lives of the Ancient-Germans..... 2742  
Tacitus on some of the individual tribes among the Ancient-Germans ..... 2744  
Ancient-Britons and Ancient-Germans morally superior to the Romans... 2745

**ADD. 15 DIO CHRYSOSTOM & DIO CASSIUS ON THE ANCIENT**

**BRITONS..... 2747**  
The life and times of the famous Stoic and orator Dio Chrysostom ..... 2747  
Dio Chrysostom's impressions of Cimmeria and of Scythia's Olbia ..... 2747  
Dio Chrysostom on Celtic druids and *magi* also in East-Celtica ..... 2748  
Dio Chrysostom on the citizenship and the laws of the Scyths ..... 2748  
Dio Chrysostom on amber among both the East- and the West-Celts ..... 2748  
Life and times of the famous historian Dio(n) Cassius Cocceianus..... 2749  
Dio Cassius's compiler Zonarus on the B.C. 400f Brythonic Brenn ..... 2750  
Dio Cassius on Julius Caesar's B.C. 55f attacks on Free Britain ..... 2751  
Dio stated that Julius 'won nothing' and the Britons 'were victorious' ... 2751  
Dio on the Roman Octavian Caesar's designs on Britain from B.C. 35-26 . 2752  
Dio on the Roman Caligula Caesar's plans to invade Britain in A.D. 39 .. 2753  
Dio on the Roman Claudius Caesar's invasion of Britain in A.D. 43f ..... 2754  
Dio on the Romans' use of German troops and also elephants against  
Britain ..... 2754  
Dio on the Britons' attack against the famous Roman General Vespasian .. 2755  
Dio on the British chieftainess Boadicea's revolt against the Romans ..... 2755  
Dio on Boadicea's conclusion to her famous war speech ..... 2757  
The implications of Boadicea's speech as reported by Dio ..... 2758  
Dio's account of the Roman Paulinus's battle against Boadicea..... 2758  
Dio's account of his Romans' war against the Jews in Judea..... 2759  
Dio on the Britons' resumption of war against the Pagan Romans ..... 2760  
Dio: Rome's 'greatest struggle' in A.D. 184-206 'with the Britons' ..... 2760  
Dio on the Free Britons and the Free Picts north of *Britannia* ..... 2761  
Dio on the Britons' decimation of fifty thousand attacking Romans..... 2762

Vicious Pagan Roman reprisal against opposing the Britons & Christians..	2762
Pagan Emperor Severus succumbs as British Christianity increases .....	2762

**ADD. 16 EDWARD GIBBON ON ROME’S DECLINE AND BRITAIN’S**

<b>ASCENT .....</b>	<b>2763</b>
Gibbon’s importance despite his unorthodox view of Christianity.....	2763
Gibbon on the divine authority of the Mosaic Law but not of the Roman Law .....	2763
Roman Government before the B.C. 451f <i>Law of the Twelve Tables</i> .....	2764
The <i>Encyclopedia Americana</i> on the Roman <i>Law of the Twelve Tables</i> ...	2764
Law Professor T.C. Sandars on the Roman <i>Law of the Twelve Tables</i> .....	2765
Gibbon admitted the <i>Law of the Twelve Tables</i> borrowed from the East...	2766
Gibbon on devolution of the Roman Republic into the Roman Empire ....	2766
Gibbon’s outline of the declining Roman Empire until A.D. 1453 .....	2767
Gibbon on Roman attempts to conquer Britain (B.C. 55 to A.D. 43f).....	2768
Gibbon on the Pre-Roman history of the Ancient Britons (before 55 B.C.)..	2768
Gibbon on the Roman conquest of South Britain alias <i>Britannia</i> .....	2769
Gibbon on Free North Britain’s attempts to liberate <i>Britannia</i> .....	2769
Gibbon on the very intense Pagan Roman hatred of British Druidism .....	2769
Gibbon on the Pagan Roman Caesars from Octavian till Vespasian .....	2770
Gibbon on the Celtic & Germanic descendants of the Ancient-Japhethites .	2772
Gibbon’s rather Anti-Protestant view of Primitive Christianity .....	2774
Gibbon’s use of the Mosaic Law in the spread of Celtic Christianity .....	2775
Gibbon on the Briton Constantine’s christianization of the Roman Empire..	2775
Gibbon on the Constantinian resurgence of British nationalism .....	2776
Gibbon on the acts in Britain of the Emperors Theodosius I & II .....	2777
Gibbon on the disruption of Britain during the fourth century .....	2777
Gibbon on the A.D. 430f arrival of the Anglo-Saxons in Britain .....	2779
Gibbon on the break-up of the Roman Empire into Daniel two’s ten toes...	2780
Gibbon on the hostilities between the Angles/Saxons/Jutes and the Britons..	2780
Gibbon on the initial battles between the Britons and the Anglo-Saxons..	2781
Gibbon on the final battles between the Anglo-Saxons and the Britons ....	2782
Romanized Anglo-Saxon pressure against Proto-Protestant Britons .....	2784
Gibbon on Procopius’s account of the sixth-century Anglo-Saxons .....	2785
Gibbon on the ongoing christianizing of the Anglo-Saxons till King Alfred .....	2786
Gibbon on the decline of the Roman Empire on the European Continent .	2787
Gibbon on course of Roman Law toward Justinian and the Middle Ages .	2787
Gibbon on the permanent Pre-Justinianic features of Roman Law.....	2788
Gibbon on the place of Justinian in the development of Roman Law.....	2789
Gibbon’s useful analysis of the Early-Mediaeval Roman Law of Persons ..	2790
Gibbon’s useful analysis of the Early-Mediaeval Roman Law of Things..	2791
Gibbon’s useful analysis of the Early-Mediaeval Roman Law of Actions ..	2792
Gibbon’s useful analysis of the Early-Mediaeval Roman Law of Delicts .	2793
Gibbon’s useful analysis of the Early-Mediaeval Roman Criminal Law ...	2794
Gibbon on the growth of the papacy from A.D. 540 until 1453 .....	2794
Gibbon on the 15th-century fall of Constantinople to the Turks .....	2795
Gibbon on the Islamic threat to the Vatican in A.D. 1481f .....	2796
Gibbon on the very remarkable papal come-back after A.D. 1481f .....	2797



*DETAIL TABLE OF CONTENTS*

Gibbon on the Protestant Reformation and the subsequent Jesuit intrigue...	2797
Gibbon's Pro-British and somewhat broadly-Protestant position .....	2798
<b>ADD. 17 GLASTONBURY AND EARLY BRITISH CHRISTIANITY .....</b>	<b>2799</b>
The <i>Encyclopaedia Britannica</i> on Ancient Glastonbury.....	2799
The <i>Encyclopedia Americana</i> on Ancient Glastonbury .....	2799
The Presbyterian Rev. Prof. Dr. McNeill on Ancient Glastonbury .....	2800
Archbishop Parker's book <i>Ancient British Church</i> on Glastonbury.....	2800
Prof. Dr. Margaret Deansly on the antiquity of Glastonbury .....	2800
Professor Dr. Deansly on the ancient church at Glastonbury .....	2802
Architect Bond on the story that Glastonbury's church was apostolic .....	2803
Austin told Pope Gregory about the Pre-Romanist church in Glastonbury..	2803
Geoffrey Arthur & William Malmesbury on the church at Glastonbury ...	2804
George F. Jowett on the apostolic ancient church in Glastonbury.....	2805
J.W. Taylor on the apostolic ancient church in Glastonbury.....	2805
<b>ADD. 18 GILDAS THE FIRST EXTANT CELTO-BRYTHONIC CHURCH</b>	
<b>HISTORIAN.....</b>	<b>2807</b>
Overview of Early-British Church History from A.D. 35 to 570 .....	2807
Rev. Professor Dr. Hugh Williams on the importance of Gildas.....	2808
Immediate ancestry of the early British Church Historian Gildas .....	2808
The life and times of Gildas the early Celtic Church Historian.....	2809
The Bible used and committed to memory by the Celtic Gildas .....	2810
London University's Dr. Morris on Late-Celtic pre-papal Britain .....	2811
Gildas on his own perceptions of Britain in the sixth-century.....	2812
The extent to which the Briton Gildas lived in the Holy Bible.....	2813
Gildas's intimate acquaintance also with Extra-Biblical Literature.....	2814
References to Gildas by name in subsequent Mediaeval Historians.....	2814
Gildas on the Ruin of Britain by Roman and Saxon depredations.....	2815
Gildas on the first establishment of Christianity in Britain .....	2816
Pre-Roman Christianity in Britain after the Pagan-Roman invasion .....	2818
Gildas on the development of Christianity in Britain from A.D. 35-311 ...	2818
Gildas on Pagan Roman persecutions of the Early-British Church .....	2820
Gildas on the Pictish and their Saxon allies' attacks on the Britons .....	2820
Gildas on the history of Britain under Vortigern and its aftermath .....	2822
Gildas on the disastrous decision made by Vortigern's Council .....	2823
Gildas on the Celtic fightback by Embres Erryll (and King Arthur) .....	2824
Gildas on the political life of early Christian-Brythonic society .....	2824
Gildas's fearless exposure of the sins of the Briton Cestynnyn.....	2825
Gildas on the serious sins of various other Brythonic Leaders .....	2825
Gildas called for a strong prophetic testimony against the wicked.....	2826
Gildas discussed both the wicked and the godly British Clergy.....	2827
Gildas on the shortcomings of the backslidden British Clergy.....	2828
Gildas on the usual marriedness of the Ancient-British Clergy.....	2829
Gildas urged complete obedience to the Bible and to its Christ .....	2829
Gildas appealed to St. Paul the Apostle against clerical celibacy.....	2830
Fragments from some of the lost letters of St. Gildas the Wise.....	2831
Various other authorities on the importance of St. Gildas the Wise .....	2833

<b>ADD. 19 SURVEY OF TREVELYAN ON WALES AS THE “LAND OF ARTHUR”</b> .....	<b>2835</b>
Trevelyan’s background-reading before writing <i>Land of Arthur</i> .....	2835
Trevelyan on the coming to Britain before B.C. 1800 of Hu Gadarn .....	2835
Aedd Mawr and his descendant the B.C. 1185 Prydain (alias Brit).....	2836
Trevelyan on the B.C. 510-441 King Dyrnwal Moelmud (or Mulmutius)..	2837
Trevelyan on some of the laws of the B.C. 510-441 King Moelmud .....	2837
Trevelyan on Moelmud’s laws in Probert’s book of <i>Welsh Laws</i> .....	2838
Trevelyan on the laws of King Dyrnwal Moelmud’s son King Belin.....	2839
Trevelyan on the times of the Early-British King Lludd (B.C. 70f) .....	2840
Trevelyan on King Lludd’s brother Prince Caswallon (B.C. 60f) .....	2840
Trevelyan on the British King Tenefan & King Cynfelyn (Cymbeline)....	2841
Trevelyan on the British King Gwydyr and King Gwairyd (Arviragus)....	2841
Trevelyan on the Pagan-Roman suppression of British Druidism.....	2841
Trevelyan on the life and times of the Briton Prince Caradoc.....	2842
Trevelyan on the Christian Pomponia & Caradoc’s daughter Eurgain .....	2843
Trevelyan on Eurgain’s British Christian College ( <i>Cor Worgorn</i> ).....	2844
Trevelyan on Eurgain’s College at the fifth-century time of Iltyd.....	2844
Trevelyan on British Christianity from Bran to Caradoc & Eurgain .....	2845
Trevelyan on the Palestinian Christian Ilid and Bran’s family .....	2847
Trevelyan on the Christian Aristobulus of Romans 16:10, and on Ilid.....	2848
Trevelyan on British Christianity from King Lucius to King Arthur.....	2850
Trevelyan on Cadoc and Arthur and Illtyd and Devi & Maelgwyn.....	2851
Mediaeval British Church from Cadwallader to Caradoc of Gwynedd .....	2852
Trevelyan on the famous A.D. 926f <i>Law Code</i> of Hywel Dda.....	2853
Trevelyan on the Welsh Prince Madoc’s migration to North America.....	2854
Trevelyan on the last independent Welsh King Llewellyn the Great.....	2855
Trevelyan on the resurrection of the Welsh by the House of Tudor.....	2855
<b>ADD. 20 THE A.D. 796F NENNI(US) ON THE HISTORY OF THE BRITONS</b> .....	<b>2857</b>
The life and times of the Brythonic Historian Nenni(us) of Wales .....	2857
Nenni’s autobiographical notes on how he wrote his <i>History</i> .....	2858
Nenni on the early history of mankind and of Ancient Britain.....	2859
Nenni on the postdiluvian popularity of the British Isles .....	2859
Nenni on the rise of the Roman Empire against Ancient Britain.....	2861
Nenni on Constantine and the Emperors of Rome who succeeded him.....	2862
Nenni on Post-Roman revival of the Christian-British Confederacy.....	2862
Nenni on Saxon betrayal of and attacks upon their British allies .....	2863
Nenni on the fallout between the Briton Vortigern & the Saxon Hengist..	2864
Nenni on Vortigern’s sons and their commitment to Christianity .....	2865
Nenni on St. Patrick the British Christian Missionary to Ireland .....	2866
Nenni on the celebrated Brythonic Christian King Arthur the Great.....	2867
The amalgamation of Celts and Saxons into Christian Anglo-Britons .....	2868
The great historical importance of Nenni’s A.D. 805f testimony.....	2869
<b>ADD. 21 GEOFFREY ARTHUR OF MONMOUTH’S HISTORY OF BRITAIN’S KINGS</b> .....	<b>2871</b>
The life and times of Welsh Historian Geoffrey Arthur of Monmouth.....	2871
Geoffrey’s claims a 675 A.D. writing down of the book he translated.....	2871

DETAIL TABLE OF CONTENTS

Internal evidence within Geoffrey's book favours its veracity..... 2872  
Geoffrey's *Introduction* to his rendition of the 675 A.D. book from  
Brittany ..... 2873  
Geoffrey's on the history of Ancient Britain as from the B.C. 1180's Brut. 2874  
Geoffrey on the early kings of Britain from Lochrine to Mulmutius..... 2875  
Geoffrey on the laws of Moelmud's (Mulmutius's) son King Belin ..... 2876  
Geoffrey on Belin's descendants from Kings Gurguint to Cligueill..... 2877  
Geoffrey on the Brythonic King Lud or Lloyd and Regent Caswallon ..... 2878  
Geoffrey on Caswallon's successful resistance to Julius Caesar ..... 2879  
Geoffrey on the Brythons from King Tenuan to King Arviragus..... 2880  
Geoffrey on Britain's kings from Meric (Marius) to Llew (Lucius)..... 2882  
Geoffrey on the British kings from Asclepiodot to Emperor Constantine . 2883  
Geoffrey on Britain's kings from Constantine II till Vortigern ..... 2884  
Geoffrey on the sudden Anglo-Saxon attacks against the Brythons ..... 2885  
Geoffrey on Brythonic victories over the Saxons until King Arthur ..... 2886  
Geoffrey on Britain's King Arthur the Great's repudiation of Rome ..... 2886  
Geoffrey on the Brythons' losses to the Saxons after King Arthur ..... 2888  
Geoffrey on the arrival of Romanism and its clashes with the Brythons ... 2888  
Geoffrey on the Brythons' loss of the whole of England to the Saxons ... 2889  
Geoffrey on the Britons' King Cadwallader's migration to Brittany..... 2889  
Geoffrey on the continuation of the Britons even under the Saxons..... 2889

**ADD. 22 WILLIAM OF MALMESBURY ON EARLY BRITISH HISTORY . 2891**

The credibility of William of Malmesbury as a Church Historian ..... 2891  
William of Malmesbury's timeous access to Glastonbury's Library..... 2892  
John Scott's remarks in his edition of William's *Glastonbury* ..... 2892  
Malmesbury on the first-century arrival of Christianity in Britain ..... 2893  
The writings of the elders on the ancient church in Glastonbury ..... 2894  
*Book of the Deeds of King Arthur* on Glastonbury's ancient church ..... 2894  
Malmesbury on King Llew's Missionaries and the Glastonbury Church .. 2895  
Malmesbury on the Ancient Brythons' derivation of the name *Glaston*.... 2896  
Malmesbury on Patrick's alleged connection with *Ynis Witrin*..... 2897  
Malmesbury on famous Post-Patricians associated with Glastonbury..... 2898  
Malmesbury's summary of Glastonbury visitors from Philip to Arthur .... 2899  
Malmesbury's *Kings of England* on Britons from Vortigern to Arthur ..... 2899  
Malmesbury on the conversion of the Anglo-Saxon Kings of Wessex..... 2900  
Malmesbury's *Kings* on the church in Glastonbury under the Britons ..... 2901  
Malmesbury on the importance of Glastonbury to the Irish and the Welsh . 2902  
Malmesbury on Pope Gregory the First's contact with Glastonbury..... 2903  
Malmesbury on Glastonbury under the Saxon King Ina of Wessex ..... 2904  
Malmesbury on Wessex after Ina under King Alfred & his son Edward... 2905  
Malmesbury on Glastonbury's privileges from Athelstan to Edgar ..... 2906  
Malmesbury on the great Anglo-Danish King Canute and Glastonbury.... 2907  
Malmesbury on the last Anglo-Saxon King Edward the Confessor ..... 2908  
Malmesbury on the Norman King William the Conqueror and  
Glastonbury..... 2908  
Malmesbury on the justness of the Norman King Henry the First ..... 2908  
Malmesbury on Stephen's promise to uphold the church's charters..... 2909

<b>ADD. 23 HENRY OF HUNTINGDON'S B.C. 60 TO A.D. 1154 HISTORY OF BRITAIN.....</b>	<b>2911</b>
Life and times of the mediaeval English historian Henry of Huntingdon..	2911
The various known publications of the historian Henry Huntingdon .....	2911
The general description of Britain in Henry Huntingdon's <i>History</i> .....	2912
Huntingdon's random remarks about the whole of South Britain .....	2913
Huntingdon on the ancient settlements within Pre-Christian Britain.....	2915
Huntingdon on Julius Caesar's defeats by the Ancient Britons.....	2916
Huntingdon re Roman designs on Britain from Augustus to Vespasian....	2917
Huntingdon on British Christianity from Lucius till Constantine.....	2917
Huntingdon on Britain's independence after Rome's withdrawal.....	2918
Huntingdon on the long wars between the Britons and the Saxons.....	2919
Huntingdon on the Anglo-Saxons' capitulation to Christianity.....	2920
Huntingdon on the Anglo-Saxon Bede as a historian of Early Britain .....	2920
Huntingdon on the conversion of Anglo-Saxons to Roman Catholicism ..	2921
Huntingdon on the Christian King Alfred's defeat of the Danes.....	2922
Huntingdon on England's Christian kings from Athelstan to Edgar.....	2923
Huntingdon on England's Christian kings Edward to Edmund Ironside ...	2925
Huntingdon on England's very godly Anglo-Danish King Canute .....	2926
Huntingdon on England's Anglo-Danish kings Harold and Hardecanut .	2926
Huntingdon on England's last Saxon kings Edward and Harold.....	2927
Huntingdon on the first Norman kings of England (from A.D. 1066).....	2927
Huntingdon on the poor rule of the Anglo-Norman King Stephen.....	2928
<b>ADD. 24 FLINTOFF ON THE RISE OF THE LAWS IN ENGLAND AND WALES .....</b>	<b>2931</b>
Life and times of the 19th-century Barrister Owen Flintoff (M.A.) .....	2931
Outline of Flintoff's <i>Rise of the Laws in England and Wales</i> .....	2932
Flintoff on the Ancient Britons from the flood till B.C. 1200 .....	2932
Flintoff on the history and religion of the Ancient Britons .....	2933
Flintoff on the Pre-Saxon Celto-Brythonic Law in Ancient Britain .....	2934
Flintoff on the Saxons' laws before and after moving to Britain.....	2935
Progressive amalgamation of the laws of the Britons and the Saxons .....	2936
Flintoff on the legal results of the christianization of the Saxons.....	2938
Origin of Brythonic and Saxon hundreds and shires and 'motes'.....	2939
Flintoff on the Early-English vassals and churls and debtors.....	2940
Flintoff on the laws of Late-Saxon and Early-Norman Britain .....	2941
Flintoff on the origin of Ancient Celto-Brythonic Common Law .....	2941
Flintoff on the origin of incipient Wessex-English Common Law .....	2942
Flintoff on fusion of British & Danish & Saxon laws as Common Law....	2942
Flintoff on Anglo-Saxon components of Anglo-British Common Law.....	2943
Flintoff on the temporary perversion of Common Law by the Normans ...	2944
Flintoff on the rise and progress of Norman tyranny in Britain.....	2945
Flintoff on the 1215 <i>Magna Carta</i> and its many re-affirmations.....	2946
Flintoff on English Law from the Reformation to the Restoration.....	2947
Flintoff on English Law from Restoration to 'Glorious Revolution'.....	2947
Flintoff on English Common Law during his own nineteenth century .....	2948
The relevance of Flintoff for twenty-first century Common Law .....	2949

DETAIL TABLE OF CONTENTS

<b>ADD. 25 THE CHADWICK STUDIES IN EARLY BRITISH HISTORY .....</b>	<b>2951</b>
Professor Nora Chadwick on independent fifth-century Britain.....	2951
Professor Hector Chadwick's essay <i>The End of Roman Britain</i> .....	2952
Sixth-century writers on the demise of the Romans in Britain .....	2953
Hector Chadwick's essay <i>The End of Roman Britain and Vortigern</i> .....	2953
Professor Nora Chadwick's essay <i>A Note on the name Vortigern</i> .....	2954
Hector Chadwick on <i>The Foundations of the Early British Kingdoms</i> .....	2954
Nora Chadwick's essay <i>A Note on Constantine Prince of Devon</i> .....	2955
Jackson's <i>British Language during...the English Settlements</i> .....	2955
Dr. Jackson's demography of fifth-century Anglo-Brythonic Britain .....	2956
Dr. Bromwich's essay <i>The Character of Early-Welsh Tradition</i> .....	2957
Prof. Rachel Bromwich on Ancient-Welsh law-books and -terminology..	2958
Prof. Bromwich on the historicity of some Ancient-Welsh folk-heroes ....	2959
Prof. Bromwich on various manuscripts anent Ancient Britain .....	2960
Professor Blair's essay <i>The Bernicians and their Northern Frontier</i> .....	2961
Blair on developments in and near Northumbria from 603 till 711 .....	2963
Owen Chadwick's essay on the <i>Early History of the Welsh Church</i> .....	2964
Nora Chadwick's <i>Intellectual Contacts between Britain &amp; Gaul</i> .....	2965
Nora Chadwick on Irishmen in Britain and Cumbrians in Scotland.....	2966
The Gaulic testimony anent fourth- and fifth-century Britain .....	2967
Nora Chadwick on <i>The Epistle of Sidonius</i> to Faustus the Briton .....	2968
Nora Chadwick on fifth-century contact between Britain & Brittany .....	2968
Nora Chadwick on Pre-Scandinavian Pan-Celtic culture of the Norse.....	2969
Nora Chadwick on fifth-century contacts between Gauls and Gaels.....	2970
Nora Chadwick on fifth-century contact between Celts in many lands .....	2971
<b>ADD. 26 LORD CHIEF JUSTICE SIR EDWARD COKE ON BRITISH</b>	
<b>COMMON LAW .....</b>	<b>2973</b>
The dramatic life and times of Lord Chief Justice Sir Edward Coke.....	2973
Coke's elevation of Biblical Christianity as basis of Common Law .....	2973
Coke's Common Law use of Proverbs 6:23 & 20:27 and Romans 2:14....	2974
Coke on Moses as the very first 'Law Reporter' in World History .....	2974
Coke on the origin of Brythonic Law from Troy in days of Samuel .....	2974
Coke on Britain's Rule of Law even before the time of Christ .....	2975
Coke's Puritan Member of Parliament Sadler on Ancient British Law ....	2976
Coke on God's giving Britons laws even before the time of Christ.....	2976
Coke on Britain's legal officers even before Christ's incarnation.....	2977
Coke on the Normans' appreciation of Anglo-Brythonic Common Law ..	2978
Coke on the importance of Parliament and of the <i>Magna Carta</i> .....	2978
Coke on supremacy of Common Law above both King and Parliament ...	2979
<b>ADD. 27 JOHN SELDEN ON THE EARLY LAWS OF THE ANCIENT</b>	
<b>BRITONS.....</b>	<b>2981</b>
The life and times of the great lawyer and polymath John Selden .....	2981
John Selden's book <i>On the Law of Nature and of the Gentiles</i> .....	2981
John Selden on the relation of the Law of Nature to the Noachide Law....	2982
John Selden on Early Britain's druids as her ancient judges .....	2983
Aristotle/Diodorus/Caesar/Suetonius/Prusaesus/Pliny on Druidism .....	2984
Selden on the link between Ancient-Brythonic and Hebrew-Christian	
Law .....	2985

Selden on druidic oaks commemorating Jehovah and prefiguring the cross .....	2987
Selden on the very widespread literacy of the Ancient Brythons .....	2987
Selden's <i>Closed Seas</i> and the Culdees' voyages to and from Britain .....	2988
Selden on Gomer and Meshech in his <i>The Legal Rights of England</i> .....	2989
Selden's <i>Notes on Drayton's 'Polyolbion'</i> re the druids of Britain .....	2989
Selden's <i>Notes on Sir John Fortescue's 'In Praise...of England'</i> .....	2990
Selden's friend Sadler's <i>Rights...[and Customs of our Ancestors]</i> .....	2990
Britain's 1761f Solicitor-General Sir William Blackstone on Selden .....	2991
Lord Clarendon on the vast erudition and solid character of Selden .....	2992
Selden a real polymath by virtue of his widespread interests .....	2992
Selden's <i>Dissertation on Fleta</i> and <i>Notes on Fortescue</i> .....	2992
Tributes by others as to Selden's towering knowledge and character.....	2993

**ADD. 28 THE SCEPTIC SIR DAVID HUME ON THE PRE-880 HISTORY**

<b>OF BRITAIN .....</b>	<b>2995</b>
The life and times of the very scholarly sceptic Sir David Hume .....	2995
Hume on Near-Eastern & Mediterranean contacts with Ancient Britain...	2995
Hume on the early inhabitants of the Ancient British Isles .....	2996
Hume on Julius Caesar's B.C. 55f perceptions of the Britons.....	2997
Hume on the A.D. 43-84f Pagan Roman conquest of South Britain.....	2998
Hume on the Roman rule over <i>Britannia</i> from A.D. 84 to 397 .....	2999
The Roman withdrawal from and the Iro-Scotic invasion of Britain.....	3000
Hume on the firm establishment of Christianity in Early Britain .....	3001
Hume on the setbacks for British Christianity at the Saxon conquests.....	3001
Hume on the clashes between the Anglo-Saxons and the Celto-Britons ...	3002
Hume on the christianization of the Angles and Saxons and Jutes.....	3003
Hume on the expansion of Christianity in the Anglo-Saxon Heptarchy ....	3004
Hume on the emergence of Christian England under King Alfred .....	3005

**ADD. 29 BEDE ON BRITAIN'S A.D. 156-731 CHURCH HISTORY..... 3007**

Bede biased racially vs. the Celts and theologically vs. the Culdees .....	3007
Bede's strengths and weaknesses also because of his being a monk .....	3007
Bede was perhaps first and foremost a Propagandist of Romanism .....	3008
Bede's <i>Church History of England</i> very valuable despite limitations .....	3008
The Venerable Bede's many known or extant Commentaries & Writings ..	3009
Bede on the Pre-Roman history of the various Ancient British Isles.....	3010
Bede on the early christianization of Britain despite the Roman Occupation .....	3011
Bede on Roman persecution of British Christians before Constantine .....	3011
Bede on the expansion of Christianity into Scotland from Cumbria .....	3012
Bede on the arrival of the Saxons and their betrayal of the Britons.....	3013
Bede on the revival of the Britons' Christianity despite the Saxons.....	3014
Bede's Anti-Celtic & Anti-Culdee views even on Gildas and Columba ...	3014
Bede on the first pope's A.D. 597 attempts to romanize the Anglo-Saxons..	3016
Bede admitted there had been Christians in Kent ere the Romanists.....	3017
Bede admitted the Brythonic Christians rejected Austin's Romanists.....	3017
Bede on the Anti-Romish attitude of also the Scottish Christians .....	3018
Bede on the establishment of Christianity among the Anglic Northumbrians.....	3018

DETAIL TABLE OF CONTENTS

Bede admitted the Northumbrian Lindisfarne adopted Iona's Culdee views .....	3019
Pope Vitalian's letter regarding relicts to the Northumbrian King Oswy ..	3020
The Apostolic Culdees vs. the Post-Apostolic Romanists at Whitby.....	3021
Bede admitted the Culdees followed the Non-Romish Apostle John .....	3022
Bede admitted Romanist Wilfrid preferred papacy to the Apostle John ....	3022
Bede defended Wilfrid's elevation of Rome above the Divine Writings ...	3023
Bede on the curse unleashed in Post-Whitby England after A.D. 666.....	3024
Bede on the completion of the nominal christianization of England .....	3025
Bede on the godly kings of Saxon Wessex such as Caedwalla and Ina .....	3026
Bede admitted that many Culdee Celts refused to romanize even by 731 .	3027
<b>ADD. 30 DR. ALEXANDER MITCHELL ON THE CELTIC CHURCH AND THE CULDEES.....</b>	<b>3029</b>
Dr. A.F. Mitchell's articles on the Celtic Church and the Culdees.....	3029
Dr. Mitchell on the Celtic Church coming at an early date from the Orient .....	3030
Dr. Mitchell on Cumbria as the bulwark of the Early-Celtic Church .....	3031
Dr. Mitchell on the rise of non-celibate monasteries in the Celtic Church...	3032
Dr. Mitchell on some leading Celtic Missionaries after Patrick .....	3033
Dr. Mitchell on the wide and enduring influence of the Early-Celtic Church.....	3035
Dr. Mitchell on the Proto-Protestant doctrine of the Early-Celtic Church .	3036
Dr. Mitchell on the High-Presbyterian character of the Early-Celtic Church.....	3037
<b>ADD. 31 REV. PROFESSOR DR. J.T. MCNEILL ON THE EARLY-CELTIC CHURCHES.....</b>	<b>3039</b>
General scope of Calvinist Dr. McNeill's book <i>The Celtic Churches</i> .....	3039
McNeill on the evidence of early traffic between the Near East and Britain .....	3039
Dr. McNeill on the Early-Cymric colonization of the British Isles .....	3040
McNeill on the role played by druids in the education of the Early-Celts .	3041
McNeill on the Gospel links between Gaul-asia & Western Gaul & Britain .....	3042
McNeill on the claim that Joseph of Arimathea evangelized in Britain.....	3043
McNeill on the Christian Britons persecuted by Pagan Rome around 250ff A.D. ....	3044
McNeill on the very-early arrival of Christianity also in Ireland.....	3044
McNeill on the birthplace of the multi-generational Christian Patrick .....	3045
McNeill on Patrick's witness to Ireland as 'the ends of the Earth' .....	3046
McNeill on the spread of the Early-Celtic Church in Cymric Wales.....	3047
McNeill on the historian Gildas the son of the North-Briton Caw Prydyn ..	3048
McNeill on Jocelyn of Lancashire re Kentigern of Greater Cumbria .....	3049
McNeill on the Iro-Celtic Missionaries Columba and Columban(us) .....	3050
McNeill on the survival of Celtic Christianity in Britain after Whitby.....	3050
McNeill on the long continuance of Celtic Christianity in Ireland .....	3051
McNeill on the prevalence of Culdees even in twelfth-century Scotland ..	3051

<b>ADD. 32 SURVEY OF BLAIR’S ROMAN BRITAIN AND EARLY ENGLAND.</b>	<b>3053</b>
Blair on the situation in Britain before the incarnation of Christ.....	3053
Blair on the Pagan Roman War against Britain (A.D. 43-85) .....	3054
Blair on the increasing christianization of Britain till A.D. 429 .....	3054
Blair on the arrival of Saxons and their struggles vs. the Britons .....	3056
Blair on the persistent Brittonic resistance to the Anglo-Saxons.....	3056
Blair on British Christianity ere the arrival of Romanism in England.....	3057
Britain was largely Brythonic and Christian even in the seventh century..	3058
Blair on the beginning of the christianization of the Anglians .....	3059
Blair on the Culdee-Christian Northumbrian-Anglian Kings Oswald & Oswy.....	3061
Blair on early developments in the Anglo-British Kingdom of Wessex....	3062
Blair on the old Celto-Brythonic and the new Anglo-Saxon Church.....	3063
Blair on Celtic-Christian successes in evangelizing the Anglo-Saxons....	3064
Blair on the continuation of Celtic Christianity even after Whitby .....	3065
Blair on Medieval England as a bastion of Christian Civilization.....	3066
Blair on English Law & Civilization even ere time of King Alfred .....	3067
Blair on the slow yet deeply-rooted emergence of Anglo-British Law.....	3069
Blair on severe punishments to protect the Anglo-British Family.....	3069
<b>ADD. 33 REV. JAMES MACKENZIE ON THE EARLY SCOTTISH CHURCH.....</b>	<b>3071</b>
Mackenzie on the cultured early inhabitants of England and Scotland.....	3071
Mackenzie on the early-age arrival of Christianity in Scotland.....	3072
Mackenzie on the A.D. 1138 extirpation of the Scottish Culdees .....	3072
Mackenzie on Scotland’s Feudalism and its undivided Parliament.....	3073
Mackenzie on the influence of Greater Cumbria’s Wycliffe in Scotland ..	3074
Mackenzie on the beginning of John Knox’s Reformation in Scotland....	3075
Mackenzie on the exaggerated tolerance of the Scottish Reformers.....	3076
Mackenzie on the clash between Knox and Mary Queen of Scots .....	3077
Mackenzie on the execution of Mary and the accession of James.....	3078
Mackenzie on Scottish <i>Tulchan</i> -Bishops and Andrew Melville.....	3079
Mackenzie on Scotland’s famous <i>National Covenant</i> of 1638.....	3081
Mackenzie on the Marquis of Hamilton and his Scottish Engagers .....	3081
Mackenzie on the disastrous Scottish Attack on Cromwell’s England.....	3082
Mackenzie on the Restoration and the ‘Killing Times’ in Scotland .....	3083
Mackenzie on the <i>Settlement</i> & Union of England with Scotland.....	3084
<b>ADD. 34 REV. PROF. DR. G.T. STOKES ON CHRISTIANITY IN ANCIENT IRELAND .....</b>	<b>3085</b>
Stokes on the Roman Tacitus’s acquaintance with Ancient Ireland .....	3085
Stokes on the arrival of Christianity in Britain and in Ireland .....	3086
Stokes on Early-Irish Christianity before Colest and Palladius .....	3087
Stokes on the British Proto-Protestant Patrick’s work in Ireland .....	3088
Stokes on the Proto-Protestant Culdee Irish Christian Columbanus.....	3089
Stokes on seventh- and eighth-century Irish Culdee Iconoclasts.....	3090
Stokes on the twelfth-century Romish takeover of Irish Christianity .....	3091



DETAIL TABLE OF CONTENTS

<b>ADD. 35 REV. W.T. LATIMER ON THE EARLY-IRISH CHURCH.....</b>	<b>3093</b>
Latimer on the :druidic~ marriedness of the Early-Irish Clergy .....	3093
Latimer on the learnedness of the Early-Irish Seminaries .....	3093
Latimer on the presbyterial government of the Early-Irish Church .....	3094
Latimer on the Proto-Protestantism of the Early-Irish Church .....	3094
Latimer on the Scandinavian Romanization of the Celtic Church.....	3095
Latimer on Malachy’s Papalization of the Medieval Irish Church .....	3095
Latimer on the English King’s subjugation of Ireland to the Papacy .....	3096
Latimer on the ongoing Protestantism of the Scottish & Irish Culdees .....	3096
<b>ADD. 36 REV. DR. JOHN A. DUKE ON THE CHURCH OF COLUMBA.....</b>	<b>3099</b>
Duke on Hector Boece’s claims about the Early-Gaelic Culdees .....	3099
Duke’s Iro-Scottish Culdees noted in Jocelyn’s <i>Life of Kentigern</i> .....	3099
Duke’s Gaelic Culdees were derived from the Cumbrian Proto-Protestants ..	3100
Duke on the Christian ancestors of the Culdee Celt St. Patrick.....	3101
Duke on the birthplace of St. Patrick in the former Greater Cumbria.....	3102
Duke on the Irish manuscripts re the birthplace of St. Patrick .....	3103
Duke on St. Patrick’s never being commissioned by the Romanists .....	3103
Duke on the Post-Patrician Irish Church before the time of Columba.....	3104
Duke on the Classic-Presbyterian Culdee Irish Church of Columba .....	3105
Duke on the life and work of the Irish Proto-Protestant Columba.....	3107
Duke on Columba’s Culdee Celtic Ministry from the Island of Iona .....	3108
Duke on Columba’s overwhelming faithfulness to Holy Scripture .....	3110
Duke on Adamnan’s account of Columba’s Sunday-sabbathkeeping .....	3111
Duke on the Columban Church’s independence of the Roman Church.....	3112
Duke on the Post-Columban Culdee Church’s hostility to Rome.....	3113
Duke on the twilight of the Culdees in Ireland till A.D. 1221 .....	3113
<b>ADD. 37 SURVEY OF ELIOT’S <i>FESTSCHRIFT</i>: “ESSAYS IN ANGLO-SAXON LAW” .....</b>	<b>3115</b>
Henry Adams on the Anglo-Saxon Courts of Law .....	3115
Henry Cabot Lodge on the Anglo-Saxon Land Law .....	3115
Edward Young on the Anglo-Saxon Family Law .....	3116
Young on puberty as the Germanic age of mature accountability .....	3118
Edward Young on the Anglo-Saxon Law of Marriage.....	3119
Edward Young on the Anglo-Saxon Law of Marital Guardianship.....	3121
Edward Young on the Anglo-Saxon Law of Marriage Termination.....	3122
Laurence Laughlin on the Anglo-Saxon Law of Procedure .....	3123
The Anglo-Saxon Law of Retribution in Eliot’s <i>Festschrift</i> .....	3123
The Anglo-Saxon Law of Sentence in Eliot’s <i>Festschrift</i> .....	3124
The Anglo-Saxon Law of Succession in Eliot’s <i>Festschrift</i> .....	3124
The Anglo-Saxon Law of Witchcraft in Eliot’s <i>Festschrift</i> .....	3125
The Anglo-Saxon Law of Jury Trial in Eliot’s <i>Festschrift</i> .....	3125
<b>ADD. 38 F.L. ATTENBOROUGH’S <i>LAWS OF THE EARLIEST ENGLISH KINGS</i> .....</b>	<b>3127</b>
Attenborough on the date of Aethelbeht’s Anglo-Saxon Laws .....	3127
Attenborough on the actual Anglo-Saxon Laws of Aethelbeht .....	3127
Attenborough on the Anglo-Saxon Laws of Hlothhere & Eadric.....	3128
Attenborough on the Anglo-Saxon Laws of Wihtrud of Kent.....	3129

Attenborough on the date of the Anglo-Saxon Laws of Ine .....	3130
Attenborough on the actual Anglo-Saxon Laws of Ine in Wessex .....	3130
Attenborough on the Anglo-Saxon Laws of King Ine (resumed) .....	3132
Attenborough on the Anglo-Saxon Laws of King Ine (continued) .....	3132
Attenborough on the Anglo-Saxon Laws of King Ine (concluded) .....	3133
Attenborough on the Anglo-Saxon Laws of Wessex's Alfred (I) .....	3133
Attenborough on the Anglo-Saxon Laws of Wessex's Alfred (II) .....	3134
Attenborough on the Anglo-Saxon Laws of Wessex's Alfred (III) .....	3135
Attenborough on the Anglo-Saxon Laws of Wessex's Alfred (IV) .....	3136
Attenborough on the Anglo-Saxon Laws of Wessex's Alfred (V) .....	3137
Attenborough on the Anglo-Saxon Laws of Wessex's Alfred (VI) .....	3137
Attenborough on the Anglo-Saxon Laws of Wessex's Alfred (VII) .....	3138
Attenborough on the Anglo-Saxon Laws of Wessex's Alfred (VIII) .....	3140
Attenborough on the Anglo-Saxon Laws of Wessex's Alfred (IX) .....	3140
Attenborough on the Anglo-Saxon Laws of Wessex's Alfred (X) .....	3142
Attenborough on the Anglo-Saxon Laws of Wessex's Alfred (XI) .....	3144
Attenborough on the Anglo-Saxon Laws of Wessex's Alfred (XII) .....	3145
Attenborough on the Anglo-Saxon Laws of Wessex's Alfred (XIII) .....	3146
Attenborough on the Anglo-Saxon Laws of Wessex's Alfred (XIV) .....	3147
Attenborough on the Anglo-Saxon Laws of Wessex's Alfred (XV) .....	3149
Attenborough on the <i>Peace Treaty</i> between Alfred & Guthrum .....	3150
Attenborough on the Concord between Alfred & Edward & Guthrum .....	3150
Attenborough on the Anglo-Saxon Laws of Edward the Elder .....	3152
Attenborough on the Anglo-Saxon Laws of King Athelstan (I) .....	3153
Attenborough on the Anglo-Saxon Laws of King Athelstan (II) .....	3154
Attenborough on the Anglo-Saxon Laws of King Athelstan (III) .....	3155
<u>Conclusions</u> on Attenborough's <i>Laws of the Earliest English Kings</i> .....	3156

**ADD. 39 PROF. J.R. GREEN ON THE CHRISTIANIZATION OF THE**

<b>ANGLO-SAXONS .....</b>	<b>3157</b>
Green on the North-German home of Anglo-Saxons before A.D. 425f. ....	3157
Green on the social organization of the Anglo-Saxons in Germany .....	3157
Green on the political order of the Anglo-Saxons in Germany .....	3158
Green on Britain before the migrations there of the Anglo-Saxons .....	3159
Green on the social organization of the Anglo-Saxons in Britain .....	3159
Green on the first & leading Anglo-Saxon Jutish Kingdom of Kent .....	3160
Green on the rise of the Post-Celtic Anglians in Northumbria .....	3161
Green on the evangelization of Northumbrian Anglians by Irish Celts .....	3161
Green on the Irish as the great evangelizers of the English .....	3162
Green on the Northumbrian conquest & conversion of Greater Mercia .....	3163
Green on the spread of Christianity throughout Northumbria .....	3163
Green on the historical decisions of A.D. 664 Synod of Whitby .....	3164
Green on Christianity as the root of Celto-Anglic Civilization .....	3165
Green on the Venerable Bede as the father of English Literature .....	3166
Green on Offa the Christian King of Anglo-Saxon-Celtic Mercia .....	3166
Green on the Pre-Christian Danish attacks on Christian England .....	3167
Green on the life of Alfred the Great of Anglo-Saxon Wessex .....	3168
Green on King Alfred's contributions to English Common Law .....	3169
Green on the tremendous diligence and industry of King Alfred .....	3169
Green on the various writings of England's King Alfred the Great .....	3170

DETAIL TABLE OF CONTENTS

Green on the Saxon Kings Edward & Athelstan & Edred & Edgar .....	3171
Green on the humble rise of the English Houses of Parliament .....	3172
Green on the great Anglo-Danish Christian King Knut or Canute .....	3172
Green on the last Christian-Saxon King Edward the Confessor .....	3173
Green on the Norman Conquest's reversal at and after <i>Magna Carta</i> .....	3174
<b>ADD. 40 THE COLONIZATION AND CHRISTIANIZATION OF ICELAND</b>	
<b>(A.D. 575F).....</b>	<b>3175</b>
Iceland: the World's first empty country colonized only by Christians.....	3175
Early awareness of Iceland's existence before her colonization.....	3175
The Celtic colonization of Iceland after the visit of Brendan.....	3176
The Scandinavian colonization of Celtic-Christian Culdee Iceland .....	3177
The <i>Encyclopedia Americana</i> on the earliest colonies in Iceland.....	3178
Katharine Scherman on the earliest colonists in Iceland .....	3179
The first Icelandic journeys to Greenland and North America .....	3179
America visited by the Icelandic Erik the Red and his son Leif Erikson...	3181
The wounded Thorvald Erikson requested a Christian burial in America .	3182
<i>Eriksaga</i> on Thorfinn Karsefni's colony in America's Vinland.....	3182
Katharine Scherman on the Celtic <i>Hvitramannaland</i> in America .....	3183
Early history in C.M. Boland's book <i>Iceland and Greenland</i> .....	3184
Icelander Palmi Hanneson's modern book <i>Islenzkar Myndir</i> .....	3184
<b>ADD. 41 THE CHRISTIAN DISCOVERY AND SETTLEMENT OF</b>	
<b>GREENLAND (A.D. 982F) .....</b>	<b>3187</b>
Geography and History in C.M. Boland's book on Greenland.....	3187
Greenland in Paul Herrmann's book <i>Conquest by Man</i> .....	3188
The dwindling away of Iceland's flourishing colony in Greenland.....	3189
Archeological evidence of Greenland's Ancient Christian Church .....	3190
Archeological evidence that Greenland's Ancient Church was Culdee.....	3191
<b>ADD. 42 PRE-COLONIAL BIBLICAL INFLUENCES ON EARLY</b>	
<b>AMERICA .....</b>	<b>3193</b>
Successive arrival in North America of her first migrant groups .....	3193
European migrations to America from A.D. 500 onward .....	3194
<i>Hvitramannaland</i> or 'Whiteman's Land' in North America .....	3196
Thorfinn Karlsefni's new colony in North America .....	3196
Eleventh- and twelfth-century Ministers and Missionaries in North	
America.....	3197
The 1170 A.D. colony in North America of the Welsh Prince Madoc .....	3198
<b>ADD. 43 U.S. SECEDES FROM BRITAIN AND SOUTH FROM U.S.A. ....</b>	<b>3199</b>
The right to secede from any broken Union is really 'self-evident'.....	3199
Colonial America's self-evident 'right' to secede from Britain.....	3200
The Southern States' self-evident 'right' to secede from U.S.A.....	3201
Secession of one nation from another recognized by laws of nature .....	3202
The 'unalienable rights' of any nation include that of secession .....	3202
America's <i>Declaration of Independence</i> was legal <i>de jure</i> .....	3203
America re-asserted her Common Law ancient rights of self-rule .....	3204
America's Pre-1776 rights already enshrined in Colonial Charters.....	3205
The rights of each State in the <i>Declaration of Independence</i> .....	3206
The <i>Declaration</i> lists the in-jur-ies committed against Americans.....	3206

The <i>Vindicia Contra Tyrannos</i> on the legality of counter-revolution.....	3207
Consistently-Christian or Presbyterian nature of the <i>Declaration</i> .....	3208
The <i>U.S. Constitution</i> promotes law and order ~ not universal franchise! ...	3210
John Adams's <i>Defense of the Constitutions of Government of the U.S.</i> ....	3211
Anti-demo-cratic nature of Article I of the <i>U.S. Constitution</i> .....	3212
Articles II to IV of the <i>Constitution</i> preserve States's rights .....	3214
The <i>Constitution</i> 's Articles V-VIII uphold Common Law and Christianity .	3215
The 1791 <i>Bill of Rights</i> an integral part of the ratified <i>U.S. Constitution</i> ..	3216
The U.S. <i>Bill of Rights</i> was clearly derived from British Common Law ...	3217
The 1861f War of Northern Aggression terminated the original <i>U.S.</i> <i>Constitution</i> .....	3219
The Law of God as the basis of the <i>U.S. Constitution</i> and <i>Bill of Rights</i> ...	3220
The Biblical basis of the <i>Declaration &amp; Constitution</i> and <i>Bill of Rights</i> ...	3221
The dominance of Christianity in U.S. court cases until 1861 .....	3223
The warping of Christianity and Law in the U.S. from 1835-60 onward...	3223
The constitutional right to secede from the United States of America.....	3224
John Quincy Adams on the desirability of dissolving an unworkable Union .....	3226
Daniel Webster: Virginia and Louisiana may secede if they choose .....	3226
The right to secede from the U.S.A. unchallenged even from 1835 till 1861 .....	3227
South Carolina's 1860 <i>Declaration of the Causes of Secession</i> .....	3229
The Yankees in 1860 flouted also the Tenth Amendment of the <i>Constitution</i> .....	3230
The Southern secession precipitated by Lincoln's breach of <i>Constitution</i> ...	3231
Lincoln's reign of terror and suspension of <i>habeas corpus</i> in Maryland...	3232
General R.E. Lee's aversion to yet defence of the right to secede.....	3233
Impact of the War of Northern Aggression also on Canada and Australia ..	3235
Thornwell on the <i>Constitution of the Confederate States of America</i> .....	3235
Thornwell's noble attempt to strengthen the Confederate Constitution.....	3236
Thornwell predicted the downfall of the C.S.A. yet the triumph of Christianity.....	3237
Lincoln's 1862 change from preserving the Union to abolishing Slavery .	3238
Dabney on the War of Northern Aggression vs. Triune Christianity .....	3239
The Yankees transubstantiate the Union after reconstructing the South....	3240
The further rape of the <i>U.S. Constitution</i> after raping the South .....	3242
Secession was unthinkable if the <i>Constitution</i> had not first been violated...	3244
The offence of the Confederate Flag to the New World Order of the New Age .....	3245
The `Starry Cross` of the Southern Confederacy a Christian Symbol .....	3246
1866 letters between Lord Acton and General R.E. Lee about the Confederacy .....	3247
Robert E. Lee's Post-Bellum eschatological hope for the future.....	3248
<b>ADD. 44 A.H. STEPHENS ON CHRIST'S C.S.A. CONFEDERACY .....</b>	<b>3251</b>
Confederate structure of Creator Himself and of His whole creation.....	3251
Life and times of C.S.A. Vice President Alexander H. Stephens .....	3252
The Southern Presbyterian's Alexander Stephens's view of slavery.....	3253
Not slavery but State rights the principal reason for secession.....	3254
The States seceded one by one before constituting the Confederacy.....	3254

*DETAIL TABLE OF CONTENTS*

Lincoln’s belligerency precipitated a second wave of secessions..... 3255

Stephens wanted to restore the *U.S. Constitution* also during the War..... 3256

Dr. R.J. Rushdoony on the significance of Alexander H. Stephens..... 3256

Stephens was pre-occupied with upholding the *U.S. Constitution* ..... 3257

What led to Stephens’s *Constitutional View of the War Between the States*..... 3258

All Presidents before Lincoln viewed the *Constitution* as a Compact ..... 3258

Stephens on the Terms of Union set forth from 1765 through 1791..... 3259

Stephens on the 1776 *Declaration of Independence* of each Colony..... 3260

Stephens on the June 24th 1776 plan for Confederation of the U.S.A..... 3261

The July 4th *Declaration* and the July 12th 1776 *Articles of Confederation*..... 3262

1783 Britain acknowledges each of the United States was sovereign ..... 3262

How the thirteen United States construed their Union from 1776-87f ..... 3263

The meaning of ‘We the people of the United States\_ in the *Constitution* .. 3264

The *Constitution*’s ‘between the States\_ and ‘Deputy from Virginia\_..... 3266

Madison’s 1787 *Constitution* not brand-new, but the old of 1777 renewed.. 3267

The first nine States’ ratifications of the 1787 *U.S. Constitution* ..... 3268

The last four States’ ratifications of the 1787 *U.S. Constitution* ..... 3269

The first ten Amendments facilitated the enactment of the *Constitution* ... 3271

All U.S. Presidents before Lincoln admitted the U.S.A. is a Confederacy... 3272

Stephens on the right of secession as implied also by *U.S. Constitution* ... 3273

Stephens on the Northerner Webster’s admission that secession is possible ..... 3274

Stephens’s 1868 justification of the South’s right to secede in 1860f ..... 3275

Even Jefferson & Hamilton believed in the right to secede from U.S.A.... 3277

Admissions from 1827 to 1845 of the right to secede from the U.S.A. .... 3278

Jefferson Davis’s May 1860 *Resolutions* were passed by the U.S. Senate... 3279

Stephens maintained that Davis was not properly speaking a secessionist .. 3280

Stephens himself opposed secession, and he unsuccessfully so advised ... 3280

Also pro-slavery Senator John C. Calhoun had wanted to save the Union .. 3281

Lincoln admitted emancipation was not the reason for his wrecking the Union ..... 3282

To Stephens, liberty and justice were more important than slavery ..... 3282

The *Constitution* never required the abolition of slavery by 1808..... 3283

The Quakers and other Humanists assailed the South from 1830 onward. 3284

The *Confederate Constitution* preserved and improved the *U.S. Constitution*..... 3284

The *Confederate Constitution* anticipated F.D. Roosevelt’s Union tyranny ..... 3286

After President Buchanan, the ‘New Republican’ Lincoln wrecked the Union ..... 3286

South Carolina’s 1860 *Declaration of Independence* from the U.S.A..... 3288

The February 1861 Southern Confederation of the seven Gulf States..... 3289

Stephens’s *Rules for the Government of the Confederate Congress*..... 3289

The impressive *Constitution of the Confederate States of America*..... 3290

The *Confederate Constitution* put its *Bill of Rights* ahead of mechanisms .. 3291

The 1861 *Permanent Constitution of the Confederate States of America*.. 3293

The *Confederate Constitution* much improved the old *U.S. Constitution*.. 3294

Stephens’s theological justification of the Confederate Government ..... 3295

Lincoln breaks his word by invading the South and by harassing slavery. 3296  
 Lincoln escalated tension by resupplying the Federal Garrison in S.C..... 3297  
 Seward’s Folly in the 1861f War far graver than adventures in Alaska..... 3298  
 Jefferson Davis called on the Confederate Congress to resist the invasion.. 3299  
 Lee refused Lincoln’s bribe for him to lead the Union against the South.. 3299  
 Abraham Lincoln illegally suspended the *Habeas Corpus Act* in 1861..... 3300  
 U.S. Supreme Court’s Taney grounded *Habeas Corpus* in *Magna Carta* .3302  
 U.S. Supreme Court Chief Justice condemned Lincoln’s criminal conduct..3304  
 Lincoln was a bigoted White Racist who resented Negroes in the U.S.A.. 3305  
 Northern Democrats’ opposition to Lincoln’s ‘Radical-Republicanism’... 3306  
 Post-Bellum Tyranny of Radical ‘Red-Republican’ Reconstructionism ... 3306  
 Christian Trinitarianism the only proper basis for the *U.S. Constitution* ... 3307  
 The Yankee *Encyclopedia Americana* on the Confederate States of  
 America..... 3308

**ADD. 45 DABNEY ON SLAVERY, SECESSION, AND THE ‘NEW SOUTH’ .3311**

Rev. Prof. Dr. Robert Dabney’s 1856 paper *Liberty and Slavery*..... 3311  
 Dabney’s 1867 *Defence of Virginia (and through her of the South)* ..... 3312  
 Dabney on Northern slave-traders being unlike Southern slave-owners ... 3313  
 Dabney on acquiring good title from bad through the lapse of time..... 3314  
 Dabney on the illicit slave-trading of some of the Yankee Northerners .... 3316  
 Dabney on Britain’s role in promoting the slave trade till 1808..... 3317  
 Dabney pleased with the 1726-1808f opposition to the slave trade..... 3318  
 The Yankees kept dumping their slaves on the South even after 1800..... 3319  
 Dabney on (O.T. & N.T.) Biblical permissibility of owning slaves ..... 3320  
 Dabney on the Yankees’ radical novel notion of ‘social contract’ ..... 3322  
 Dabney held that Abolitionism is French-Revolutionary Jacobinism..... 3323  
 Dabney denied the *Declaration of Independence* was abolitionistic ..... 3324  
 ‘Free’ or Libertine Yankees not superior to ‘enslaved’ Southerners ..... 3326  
 Dabney held that the South had a constitutional right to secede..... 3327  
 The 1789 *U.S. Constitution* was a secession from the 1776f  
*Confederation*..... 3329  
 The Union had no right forcibly to prevent States from seceding ..... 3330  
 Dabney denied slavery was the reason for secession or the 1861f War..... 3330  
 Dabney on the unwise concessions made by the South from 1820 onward. 3331  
 The South bent over backwards to avoid the approaching 1861f War..... 3332  
 The South fought the 1861f War ‘for freedom throughout the World’ .... 3333  
 Dabney on the numerical superiority of the Yankies Armies against the  
 South..... 3334  
 Dabney held Southern slavery as right before God and helpful for Blacks.. 3335  
 Dabney on *The New South* reconstructed after the 1861-65 War ..... 3336  
 Dabney on the New South as burden-bearer of ‘New Republicanism’ ..... 3338  
 Dabney on the Christian road ahead in and through the New South ..... 3338  
 Dabney’s important essay on *The True Purpose of the Civil War*..... 3339  
 Dabney accused the ‘Red Republicans’ of fomenting the 1861 War..... 3341  
 Dabney declared the South fought for the *U.S. Constitution*..... 3343  
 Dabney’s great anti-revolutionary post-bellum essay on *Civic Ethics*..... 3343  
 Dabney’s important 1888 essay on *Anti-Biblical Theories of Rights* ..... 3345

*DETAIL TABLE OF CONTENTS*

**ADD. 46 THE 1884 SYMINGTON’S *MESSIAH THE PRINCE* .....3349**  
 The American edition of Rev. Professor Symington’s *Messiah the Prince* .3349  
 Symington on patience needed in the subjugation of all by Christ ..... 3349  
 Symington on the ongoing expansion of Christ’s Visible Church..... 3350  
 Symington on the duty of all nations to submit to Christ’s rule ..... 3351  
 Symington on the need for all nations to elect godly governments ..... 3352  
 Symington: not State Churches but Christian States are needed ..... 3354  
 Symington: the New Testament strengthens the need for godly governments..... 3355  
 The U.S. National Reform Association: Christ is King of the nation ..... 3356  
 The *Westminster Standards* of all the Presbyterian Churches ..... 3357

**ADD. 47 ALTHUSIUS AND LEGAL SPHERE-SOVEREIGNTY ..... 3359**  
 The career of the Calvinistic Jurist Professor Dr. Johann Althusius..... 3359  
 Althusius’s covenantal book *Politics Methodically Set Forth* ..... 3359  
 Professor Daniel Elazar’s modern ‘Foreword’ to Althusius’s *Politica*..... 3360  
 Althusius’s emphasis on the Decalogue and Sovereignty Rights ..... 3361  
 Althusius’s chapter I (on the General Elements of Politics)..... 3361  
 Althusius’s chapter II (on Marriage and the Family) ..... 3362  
 Althusius’s chapter III (on Kinship and the Kinship Associations)..... 3363  
 Althusius’s chapter IV (on *Collegia* or Voluntary Associations)..... 3364  
 Althusius’s chapters V-VI (on the City or Metropolis)..... 3365  
 Althusius’s chapters VII-VIII (Provinces & Decalogue & Presbyteries)... 3365  
 Althusius’s chapter IX (Political Sovereignty & Church Communication) .3368  
 Althusius’s chapters X-XVII (Communications and Ephors and Kings)... 3369  
 Althusius’s chapters XXI-XXVII (Prudent Political Use of the Decalogue).. 3369  
 Althusius’s chapter XXVIII (on Ecclesiastical Administration) ..... 3372  
 Althusius’s chapters XXIX-XXXIX (Secular Administration & Tyranny) .3374  
 Prof. Dr. Herman Dooyeweerd’s assessment of Professor Dr. Althusius .. 3374

**ADD. 48 HISTORICAL IMPORTANCE OF BRYTHONIC CUMBRIA ..... 3375**  
 The prehistoric ancient archaeology of Brythonic Cumbria..... 3375  
 Dr. J.A. Giles (D.C.L.) on the colonization of Ancient Britain ..... 3376  
 The founding of Brythonic Cumbria and its Pre-Roman culture..... 3377  
 Brythonic Scotland ere the Gaels moved there from their native Ireland .. 3378  
 The early ethnography of the Celts in Ancient Brythonic Cumbria ..... 3378  
 The long persistence of Cumbria’s ancient language Cumbric ..... 3379  
 Inability of the Romans to crush the *Brigantes* in Yorkshire and Cumbria.. 3380  
 The nature of the Cumbrian resistance against the Pagan Romans..... 3381  
 The very tokenistic nature of the Roman presence in Cumbria ..... 3382  
 The High-King’s son Prince Meric settled in Westmorland despite the Romans ..... 3383  
 A.D. 75-87f: Arviragus’s son Prince Meric ruled from Westmorland..... 3384  
 Prince Meric of Westmorland’s son King Coill of Cumbria ..... 3386  
 First-century Brythonic Christian Cumbria south of Hadrian’s Wall ..... 3386  
 Christianity replaced Preparatory Druidism in second-century Cumbria .. 3387  
 Anti-Roman ferment in North Britain after Hadrian’s Wall was completed . 3390  
 The Cumbrian Prince Coill’s son Llew the Lion (the Christian King Lucius) ..... 3391

The testimony of the Anti-Celtic A.D. 731 Bede on the historicity of Lucius .....	3392
Post-Bede testimonies before Fortescue about the Cumbrian King Lucius ..	3393
Historicity of Lucius from the 1470 A.D. Chief Justice Fortescue onward..	3395
Testimony of Dr. John Owen regarding historicity of King Lucius .....	3395
Dr. Mosheim and George Borrow on Cumbria's Culdee Christian King Lucius .....	3396
The powerful influence of Lucius's Christian Cumbria on the Pagan Romans .....	3397
The influence of South Britain's King Llew on Free Britain's King Donald.....	3397
Modern Church Historians on the Christian British Kings Llew and Donald.....	3398
301f A.D.: Carant's revolt in Westmorland against the Pagan Romans ....	3399
Cumbrian Christianity under King Coel Godebog and Prince Constantine ..	3400
329f A.D.: Cumbrian Westmorland sought by both Octav and Traherne ..	3402
395f A.D.: The Cumbrian Ninian evangelizes the Southern Picts in Scotland .....	3403
The life and times of Prince Ninian the Culdee Christian from Cumbria ..	3404
The life and times of the Cumbrian Culdee Christian St. Patrick.....	3405
Patrick from neither Scotland nor Southwest Britain but from Cumbria...	3406
Charles Thomas's 1981-86 research on Patrick's Christian Cumbria.....	3407
Nenni on St. Patrick the Cumbrian Christian Missionary to Ireland.....	3409
The stability of Christian Cumbria in spite of the Anglo-Saxon invasions ..	3409
King Arthur the Great and most of his battles near Cumbria .....	3410
The Cumbrian Kentigern's evangelizing efforts despite many setbacks ...	3412
The Cumbrian Gildas as Britain's oldest extant Church Historian.....	3413
Gildas on the Anglo-Saxons punishing the backslidden Brythonic Christians .....	3414
Prof. K.H. Jackson on the tenacity of the Cumbrians around 600 A.D.....	3416
The Cumbric poem <i>Gododdin</i> shows Cumbria's heroism and Christianity..	3417
Nenni on seventh-century clashes between the Cumbrians and the Anglians .....	3418
Cumbria remained a stronghold of Culdee Christianity even after 664.....	3419
Anglian and Viking influences in Cumbria from the seventh century onward .....	3420
Cumbria's 650f demography shows the continuing influence of Brythons ..	3421
Modern remnants of the Ancient Brythonic Cumbrian Law and Language..	3422
Ancient Cumbrian Christianity - now extinct, or resuscitable? .....	3423
<b>ADD. 49 THE CUMBRIAN PATRICK &amp; HIS WORK IN IRELAND .....</b>	<b>3425</b>
The remarkable background of the Brythonic Cumbrian Christian Patrick ..	3425
Was Patrick from Caledonia's Clyde or <i>Britannia</i> 's Strathclyde? .....	3426
The significance of Cumbria's Brampton to Patrick's birthplace.....	3428
Patrick's writings not in Erse or Gaelic or Brythonic but in :Dog-Latin' ..	3428
Patrick from neither Scotland nor Southwest Britain but Cumbria .....	3430
Charles Thomas on Patrick as a native of Greater Cumbria.....	3432
Patrick's grasp of the Ancient-Brittonic Bible .....	3433
Patrick's capture by the Irish and his servitude in Ireland.....	3434
Patrick the Briton was a Proto-Protestant.....	3434



*DETAIL TABLE OF CONTENTS*

Holinshed and Hanna on the life of Patrick .....	3436
Patrick's great theodicy - his <i>Letter to King Coroticus</i> .....	3437
Patrick's <i>Letter to King Coroticus</i> (continued).....	3438
Patrick's <i>Letter to King Coroticus</i> (concluded) .....	3439
The testimony anent Patrick of his own nephew Sechnall .....	3440
Patrick's Christonomic and trinitarian <i>Daily Morning Prayer</i> .....	3440
Rev. Prof. Dr. Lee's rendition of Patrick's <i>Daily Morning Prayer</i> .....	3441
Patrick's own autobiographical <i>Confession</i> or <i>Profession of Faith</i> (I) .....	3443
Patrick's <i>Confession</i> or <i>Profession of Faith</i> (II) .....	3444
Patrick's <i>Confession</i> or <i>Profession of Faith</i> (III) .....	3445
Patrick's <i>Confession</i> or <i>Profession of Faith</i> (IV).....	3446
Patrick's <i>Confession</i> or <i>Profession of Faith</i> (V) .....	3446
Patrick's <i>Confession</i> or <i>Profession of Faith</i> (VI).....	3447
Patrick's <i>Confession</i> or <i>Profession of Faith</i> (VII) .....	3448
Patrick's <i>Confession</i> or <i>Profession of Faith</i> (VIII) .....	3449
Patrick's <i>Confession</i> or <i>Profession of Faith</i> (IX).....	3450
Patrick's christianization and codification of Irish Common Law .....	3450
Patrick compared the British Christians with the Ancient Israelites.....	3452
The British Christian Patrick was a 'Primitive Presbyterian' .....	3453
The Cumbrian Briton Patrick's impact on all of the British Isles.....	3454
<b>ADD. 50 FROM OLD BRITAIN TO WESTMINSTER CONFESSIO</b> .....	<b>3455</b>
The very ancient migrants to the British Isles.....	3455
The Pan-Celtic culture of the Ancient British Isles.....	3456
The Venerable Bede on the populating of Britain and Ireland .....	3458
I - Ireland before Patrick.....	3459
The arrival of Partholan in Ireland around 1500 B.C. ....	3460
The druids of Ancient Ireland and the rest of the British Isles .....	3461
B.C. 1383: the 'Father of Irish Laws' Ollamh Fodhla and his successors.....	3462
A picture of Irish life was preserved in the early records anent Cuchulainn .....	3464
Diodorus, Josephus, Tacitus and Selden on the Ancient Celts .....	3464
The Ancient Celts moved <i>via</i> Western Europe toward Britain and Ireland .....	3465
Theological and historical proofs of early literacy in the British Isles .	3466
Further evidence: the Pre-Christian antiquity of Irish <i>Ogham</i> writings..	3467
A.S. Green on the political and social structures of Ancient Ireland .	3468
Laws and politics in Ancient Ireland many centuries before Christ...	3469
Scotland's Skene and the <i>Irish Annals</i> on the Iro-Scots of Ancient Ireland .....	3470
Blackstone and Macalister: Ancient-Celtic Law (Brythonic & Scotie & Irish).....	3470
Barrister Ginnell on the ancient customs and laws of Ireland.....	3471
Chadwick and Neill on the customs of Ancient Ireland .....	3471
The Jurist Sir Henry Maine on the Laws of Ancient Ireland .....	3472
Maine on private property rights under Ancient Irish Law.....	3473
II - Britain before Patrick.....	3474
Delitzsch, Kurtz, Hengstenberg, Keil, Leupold & Atkinson on Gomer .	3474
Earliest travels of the Cymric Proto-Welsh from Ararat to Britain....	3475

Strong evidences of literacy among the Early Brythons in Britain ....	3476
The Ancient Britons ~ <i>Cassiterides</i> ~ alias :The Tin Islands ~ .....	3478
The Druids at the Ancient British Parliamentary Assemblies.....	3479
Parliamentary <i>Gorseddau</i> in various parts of Ancient Britain.....	3480
Druidism the religion of Ancient Britain .....	3481
British Druidism and primordial religion.....	3481
Early-Brythonic Druidism and the Biblical Trinity.....	3483
Northwest European Druidism headquartered in Ancient Britain.....	3484
Abraham ~s Old Testament oak-trees and Early-Brythonic Druidism ..	3484
British Druidism as a preparation for the Gospel.....	3485
Relationship between British Druidism and the later B.C. 530f	
Pythagoras .....	3487
Dr. J.A. Giles (D.C.L.) on the colonization of Ancient Britain .....	3488
Giles on Ancient Britain ~s monotheism and sophisticated culture ....	3489
Brythonic Kings from B.C. 1800 till the A.D. 43f Roman occupation .	3489
Early Iro-Gaelic colonies in what is now Scotland .....	3491
Professor Dr. Edward Anwyl on Ancient-Celtic crimes &	
punishments.....	3492
The Phoenician Himilco ~s B.C. 535 visit to the British Isles .....	3494
Greek testimony about the British Isles from B.C. 495f onward .....	3495
B.C. 510f: Ancient Britain ~s golden age under King Moelmud(-tius) .	3497
Details of some of the Mulmutine Laws of Ancient Britain.....	3499
Influence of Moelmud ~s Laws even after the Roman Conquest of	
Britain .....	3500
B.C. 330: The Greek geographer Pytheas of Marseilles on Early	
Britain .....	3501
The British Queen Martia and her Martian Laws.....	3502
Developments in Scotland during the last three centuries B.C. ....	3503
The B.C. 60 description of Britain (from B.C. 495f) by the Sicilian	
Diodorus.....	3504
B.C. 55f: Julius Caesar ~s description of Ancient Britain.....	3506
The B.C. 20 testimony of the Greek Strabo about Ancient Britain....	3508
Other famous testimonies about Ancient Britain .....	3509
When did the Gospel first arrive in the British Isles?.....	3510
Clear patristic evidence that Britain was soon reached with the	
Gospel .....	3512
III ~ Britain from Patrick till the <i>Westminster Confession</i> .....	3514
Ireland before its evangelization by the Cumbrian Briton Patrick ....	3514
The Life and Work and Writings of the Christian Briton Patrick .....	3515
The British Culdee Christian Patrick ~s view of clerical celibacy.....	3516
Irish Culdee Monasteries were Family Schools and Defence Centres .	3517
<i>The Historians' History</i> on Patrick ~s Irish Church.....	3518
Patrick ~s disciples not Romanists but clearly Proto-Protestants .....	3519
The missionary zeal of Patrick ~s Irish Culdee Christians .....	3520
Armagh and Bangor become strongholds of Christianity in Ulster ...	3520
The nature of the Patrician Church in the British Isles.....	3521
The further strengthening of Christianity in Cumbria and Scotland ..	3523
Historical background and importance of the 1615 <i>Irish Articles</i> .....	3524
The Irish Puritan Archbishop Usher: Apostolic-Age British	
Christianity .....	3526

DETAIL TABLE OF CONTENTS

The legal and political contents of the 1615 <i>Irish Articles</i> .....	3527
Influence of Archbishop Usher's 1615 <i>Irish Articles</i> on Westminster. ....	3530
Echoes of Ussher's <i>Irish Articles</i> in the <i>Westminster Confession</i> .....	3531
The Westminster divines' clear Christonomy over all society.....	3533
<u>Conclusion</u> : God's revelations much preserved in the Britannic Isles.....	3535
<b>ADD. 51 BIBLICAL ROOTS OF THE AUSTRALIAN CONSTITUTION.....</b>	<b>3537</b>
Ancient Constitutional Law among the Early-Irishmen & Iro-Scots.....	3537
Constitutional Law among the Ancient Britons before Christianity.....	3539
The gradual christianization of the Ancient British Constitution .....	3540
From the 1215 <i>Magna Carta</i> to the 1643-49 <i>Westminster Assembly</i> .....	3542
Captain Cook's 1788 establishment of the Common Law in Australia .....	3544
The historic and Christian <i>Coronation Oath</i> of the Australian Queen.....	3545
Christian influences before and in Australia's 1900 <i>Constitution</i> .....	3546
<b>ADD. 52 AUSTRALIAN LAW AND NATIVE TITLE (AS IN MABO) .....</b>	<b>3549</b>
Common Law replaces that of uncivilized tribes in British Colonies.....	3549
Rev. Prof. Dr. Dabney on gaining good title from bad title .....	3550
Welsh rights in English land vs. modern English landowners? .....	3551
Land acquisitions by colonists in America (and Australia <i>etc.</i> ) .....	3552
What tribe first got dispossessed by the next migrant tribe? .....	3553
The myth of <i>terra nullius</i> is foreign to the Common Law.....	3554
Outline of Australia's epoch making 1990f <i>Eddie Mabo cases</i> .....	3555
The need of determining the facts in the <i>Eddie Mabo cases</i> .....	3556
Judge Moynihan's determination of the facts in the <i>Mabo cases</i> .....	3557
The Murray Islands not annexed by Queensland Government till 1879....	3559
What the High Court could not and did not do in the <i>Mabo cases</i> .....	3560
The beginning of Mr. Justice Brennan's major judgment in <i>Mabo</i> .....	3560
Brennan's factually incorrect <i>obiter</i> statement in <i>Mabo</i> .....	3562
Brennan's appeals to Irish and Welsh Law precedents in <i>Mabo</i> .....	3564
Brennan's canvassing colonial decisions also in other Continents .....	3565
Brennan on the extinguishability of tribal title in Australia .....	3566
The <i>Mabo</i> judgments of Sir William Deane and Mary Gaudron JJ.....	3568
Judge Sir Darryl Dawson: tribal usufructs extinguished by Crown.....	3569
Mr. Justice Toohey: interrupted possession vitiates ownership.....	3569
The judgments of Sir Anthony Mason C.J. & Michael McHugh J. ....	3570
The implications and the aftermath of the decision in <i>Mabo</i> .....	3571
The <i>Mabo</i> cases no way enshrine a preferential tribal title .....	3573
Racial and earth age discrimination in Australia's Uniting Church.....	3574
Racial friction in the wake of the two <i>Eddie Mabo cases</i> .....	3575
Do Black Tasmanians have special rights against Black Mainlanders?....	3576
Manning Clark on the Mainland Australoids' oppression of Negritos .....	3577
J.M. Howard: Negritos 'retreated' before the 'Aborigines' .....	3578
Dr. C. Wilson on Negrito rock art in Kakadu (Northern Territory).....	3579
S. Plowman: Australian 'Aborigines' killed the Mainland Negritos .....	3579
Even Black Tasmanians were not really 'aboriginal' to Australia.....	3580
Lawyer Camarri's 1993 paper <i>Legal Aspects of the Mabo Decision</i> .....	3581
G.A. Savell on the interests of Australian Mining Companies .....	3582
The <i>Mabo cases</i> did not say what Socialism says they said .....	3583
Law Professor Geoffrey de Q. Walker on the two <i>Mabo cases</i> .....	3583

*COMMON LAW: ROOTS AND FRUITS*

Judge Rodney Meagher on *Mabo* and the *Australian Constitution* ..... 3584  
H.M. Morgan's *Address at Bond University* on the *Mabo cases*..... 3586  
1993f radicalization of misinterpretations of the *Mabo cases* ..... 3587  
What the *Mabo cases* did and what they did not decide..... 3589  
Dump social engineering, and go back to the 'sixty years' rule\_!..... 3590  
Conclusion: right place of 'Tribal Title' in Australian Common Law..... 3591  
Stars and Crosses of Australia: our Christian Heritage on our Flag ..... 3593

# FOREWORD

This dissertation for the Doctorate in Common Law degree (D.C.L.) reflects much of the story of my life. Why so?

Francis Lightfoot Lee, Richard Henry Lee, Lighthorse Harry Lee and General Robert E. Lee were all born in Westmoreland County. So too was I, Francis Nigel Lee. In all their cases, Westmoreland County, Virginia (the Old Dominion) – in the eighteenth and nineteenth centuries. In my own case, in Westmorland, Cumbria (the Older Dominion) – during the twentieth century.

As a boy in Britain, my parents often reminded me that I had among my forebears those not only from the mountain border between England and Scotland – but ancestors also from both the North and the South in Ireland. The Lee family tree showed *inter alia* we had descended from Lord Joule, a Nor(se)man noble who had landed in Britain with William the Conqueror in 1066 and who had invented a pendulum clock. He was a forefather also of another of our ancestors – James Prescott Joule, the Christian discoverer of the first law of thermodynamics.

At the outbreak of World War II, my father, Lieutenant-Commander William Sydney Lee, was appointed Chief Experimental Officer and Radar Chief of the Royal Navy (South Atlantic), stationed at Cape Town. So it was that our family moved to the then Union of South Africa. There I grew up; took my postgraduate law degree; and became a Trial Lawyer or Barrister-at-Law and Advocate of the Supreme Court. Later, I became: a Minister of Religion; a College Lecturer; a Scholar-in-Residence; and a Seminary Professor. On the way, further degrees were also acquired – including earned doctorates in theology, philosophy, ministry, and education.

\* \* \* \* \*

In 1966, I had moved to the U.S.A. to teach philosophy and to preach the Gospel. There I grasped not only the historical but also the political implications of the famous *Westminster Confession of Faith* and the *Westminster Larger Catechism* for the so-called ‘Westminster System of Government.’ Over the next fourteen years – and under the influence of godly Americans like Dr. Carl McIntire, Dr. Cornelius Van Til, Dr. Loraine Boettner, Dr. R.J. Rushdoony, Dr. C. Gregg Singer, and Dr. Morton H. Smith – I was enabled to integrate my love of the Bible and of British Common Law into its later American (and even Confederate) developments in the same constitutionalist tradition.

In 1981, I became Professor of Theology at the Queensland Presbyterian Theological Seminary in Australia – and also Caldwell-Morrow Lecturer in Church History. There, I became aware of the blend of the *British Constitution* and the *American Constitution* – precisely in the 1901 *Australian Constitution* (with its important stress on the rights of the several States over against those of the Federal Government). This in turn again impressed me with the crucial importance of understanding the sources and the development of British (and Scots-Irish) Common Law – and its worldwide application, at least among all English-speaking peoples.

Finally, I was asked to fly to Dallas in 1985 and to give some lectures on the Biblical roots of American history (at a Congress on Christian Government). The present dissertation is a vast expansion of those lectures, which first stimulated my further studies into this area of learning.

Most of my research toward this present doctorate in jurisprudence was done in Brisbane. Among many others – such as Rev. D. Douglas of the British-Israel World Federation in Queensland (and its library and personnel), as well as the Ex-Canadian Mr. Don Sisson of the Queensland Ogham Society (for the study of ancient writings of the British or Western Isles) – I would like to thank the following persons in particular for all their help.

- (1) Ex-Attorney Rev. Peter Barson, Business Convener and later Moderator of the Presbyterian Church of Queensland. It was he who first introduced me to that State's stimulating Supreme Court Law Library.
- (2) That institution's Law Librarian, Aladdin Rahemtula. He very graciously made the priceless antique book collection there available to me for research – times without number.
- (3) Queensland Supreme Court Judge the Hon. Bruce McPherson (Ph.D.). He very kindly provided me with precious photostats – of Early Anglo-Saxon Laws.
- (4) Mr. Leo Maloney, Vice-President of the Queensland Irish Association. He kindly placed its valuable collection of books on Ancient Ireland – at my disposal.
- (5) Rev. Dr. T. Rees-Thomas of the Queensland Welsh Society. He wisely directed me to the Oxley Collection of Ancient Brythonic Literature in the Queensland State Library.
- (6) Rev. J.D. Sutherland, M.A., Lecturer in Scottish Church History at the Queensland Presbyterian Theological Hall. He advised me anent the Picts and Early Scotland.
- (7) A very special word of thanks to Braam Scheepers for retyping beautifully the entire manuscript, and getting it ready for publication. Also to Conrad and Larno Meyer for their magnificent and patient work in constructiong all the maps for this book.
- (8) Professor Dr. Geoffrey de Q. Walker, sometime Dean of the Faculty of Law at the University of Queensland. He placed its Law Library at my disposal.
- (9) Queensland Attorney-at-Law Dr. Steve Gustafson, J.D. (University of Chicago). He greatly encouraged me, from time to time.
- (10) Supreme Court of Victoria Barrister (and Presbyterian Ruling Elder) the late F.M. Bradshaw, LL.M. He was Australia's great authority on trusts – and sometime also Procurator and Law Adviser of the Presbyterian Church of Australia.

## FOREWORD

(11) Rev. Dr. David Mitchell (LL.M. & Ph.D.), formerly Attorney-General of Lesotho and currently Procurator of the Presbyterian Churches of Victoria and Tasmania. His several stimulating essays and lectures on the historical development of our Anglo-American-Australian Common Law – has been a shining example to me.

\* \* \* \* \*

Authorities are all agreed that British Common Law, with its commendable principles of equity, arose in ancient times quite independently of Pagan Roman Law. There is further agreement that, over the years, British Common Law absorbed many Biblical principles into its own genius.

There is, however, widespread disagreement as to when British Common Law first arose; from what roots it grew; and to what external influences it was exposed, especially during its early days. There is disagreement on if Biblical influences indeed reached Britain in Pre-Christian days; on the approximate date when Christianity first reached the Isles; and on the extent (if any) to which Early British Christianity was influenced by Roman Paganism and, a little later, by incipient Roman Catholicism.

There is also disagreement: as to the extent to which Pre-Colonial America was exposed to Christianity (by Celtic and Celto-Viking visitors *etc.*); as to the scope of Puritan influence in Colonial America; as to the root cause of the American *Declaration of Independence*; and as to the precise meaning of the *U.S. Constitution* in general and the First Amendment thereof in particular. Indeed, there is further disagreement as to the real causes of the War between the American States in the middle of the nineteenth century.

Here is **the problem stated**. What is the relevance also to American and Australian society today of British Common Law – from its earliest origins to the zenith of its development?

One needs to answer this question – in the light of the ever-increasing modern onslaught of world humanism and international socialism and revolutionary ideology against British Common Law (whether in its English, American or Australian form). To answer correctly, at least the following eight queries must be addressed:–

1. Does our Common Law indeed root in the Eternal *Elohim* Himself – or is it merely a relativistic social convention, subject to never-ending radical evolution?
2. Does Holy Scripture present us with normative principles for Law and Government – or is the Bible simply a record of the obsolete customs of the primitive tribes of Ancient Hebrews, irrelevant to modern needs?
3. Do the Government and the Common Law of Pre-Christian Britain at least to some extent derive from Divine Revelation (both in nature and in Scripture) – or do they root in savage survivals best abhorred by today's `enlightened` society?
4. Did the Ancient Hebrews visit Britain either before or soon after the incarnation of Christ – or was there never any contact between God's ancient covenant people and the inhabitants of the British Isles before the Early Middle Ages?

5. Did Britain indeed start being enlightened even by the Gospel within just five years after Calvary – or did that land remain plunged in dismal darkness, until after the rise of the papacy around 600 A.D.?
6. Did British Common Law become christianized before the conquest of Britain by the Anglo-Saxons, and were the latter’s legal systems themselves christianized in Britain by the time of Charlemagne – or was the Early Mediaeval legal system in Britain still largely pagan, and grossly inferior to that of christianized Roman Law?
7. Did the Pre-Reformation, the Protestant Reformers and more especially the Early Calvinists have their greatest impact particularly in England and upon her Common Law – or was English Law unenlightened, compared to signal contemporaneous developments on the European Continent?
8. Were (and are) the American and the Australian Legal Systems indeed the very Quintessence of Christian Jurisprudence thus far developed – or is traditional British Common Law an outdated system doomed to be replaced by the principles of the French Revolution *via* the various United Nations’ Conventions?

\* \* \* \* \*

To get answers to the above queries we shall address the previous **statement of the problem**. Our chapters will approach what we call ‘the Westminster System of Government’ – in terms of the history of law (from a conservative Christian and Presbyterian perspective).

First, we establish the importance of the subject. This will be done in our *Introduction*, and in our *Chronological Table*.

Then we shall successively go on to discuss: the Biblical Background of the Common Law; the Common Law in Pre-Christian Britain; Christianized British Law before the Anglo-Saxon Invasion; the British Christianization of Anglo-Saxon Law; British Common Law from Alfred to the Reformation; English Law from the Reformation to Oliver Cromwell; the Impact on the Common Law of Westminster Puritanism; the Post-Westminster Common Law in England; and the Development of Common Law in America and Australia.

After that, in a brief conclusion, we will endeavour to summarize the findings. Finally, there follow several *Addenda* embracing (among other items) also a host of extracts from rather rare documents – in order to facilitate further study.

\* \* \* \* \*

Inevitably, there is a certain amount of overlap and sometimes even a little repetition. For we have endeavoured to write each chapter and each addendum as a self-contained unit which can be read even independently of the rest of this dissertation.

In doing all this, we believe the right direction has already been pointed out by Queensland University Law Professor R.D. Lumb. In his book *Australian Constitutionalism* (Brisbane: Butterworth, 1983, pp. 25 & 68), he rightly states that



## FOREWORD

the rights of *Magna Carta* were the rights of eighteenth-century Englishmen. Blackstone's *Commentaries* were published in 1765, a few years before Captain Cook proclaimed his Majesty's sovereignty over the eastern coast of Australia, and a little over 20 years before English colonists set foot on Australian soil.

Blackstone's general outline of the constitution and laws of England, continues Professor Lumb, was to influence profoundly the understanding of these laws in the Australian colonies. But the fundamental law to which Bracton and Coke appealed, was first to transform the legal system of the American Colonies - to create a new federalist structure; to produce a *Bill of Rights*; and to lay the foundations for a doctrine of judicial review. Some of that tradition of constitutionalism was to enter Australia at a later stage. The Australian system incorporates features of both the American and English systems.

We now proceed to establish the precise scope of *The Roots and Fruits of the Common Law in Ancient (Biblical, Iro-Scotic, Brythonic and Anglo-Saxon) Jurisprudence*. Only then will we adequately appreciate some of their fruits in Great Britain, the United States, and Australia.

Rev. Professor Dr Francis Nigel Lee,  
Barrister-at-law of the Supreme Court of South Africa,  
Professor of Theology and Caldwell-Morrow Lecturer in Church History,  
Queensland Presbyterian Theological Hall, Brisbane, Australia, 1993.



# INTRODUCTION

In this introduction to our present study on the *Roots and Fruits of the Common Law in Britain, the United States, and Australia* – we simply want to try and establish the crucial importance of the subject. By this we mean the roots of the Common Law in ancient Biblical, Iro-Scotic, Brythonic and Anglo-Saxon times – and also its fruits in Great Britain, the United States of America and the Commonwealth of Australia.

To do this, we will merely quote from ten other twentieth-century documents. They all recognize the very early (if not also the Pre-Christian) existence of Biblical influences in Ancient Britain. Hence, they all underscore the great contribution made by Anglo-American Common Law – to both the British Commonwealth of Nations and the U.S.A, in particular, and to the World in general.

\* \* \* \* \*

First. We cite from the 1986 *Encyclopaedia Britannica* (29:23f & 21:424 & 16:597). It states that from *circa* 2300 B.C., control of the trade routes was soon taken over by British chieftains in the coastal area of what later became Southern England.

Commerce was then far-flung – in one direction to Cornwall and Ireland, and in the other to Central Europe and the Baltic (whence raw amber was imported into Britain). Amber bead-spacers manufactured in that central portion of the coast of Southern England which the later Anglo-Saxons would call Wessex, have been found at Mycenae in Greece. The very Ancient British chieftains in ‘Wessex’ also constructed that remarkable monument of large sandstones which the later Anglo-Saxons would call: Stonehenge.

Tin mining was reported as early as B.C. 1500 and later, in Great Britain. The Phoenicians – perhaps, if not even probably, with some Hebrew crew-members (*cf.* Judges 5:17) – are then believed to have played an important part in spreading the early bronze culture, by their trade in tin. This, their ships brought to the Eastern Mediterranean from Great Britain – at least as early as 1100 B.C. Especially the tin mines in Cornwall were famous.

The centuries B.C. 700-400 saw a succession of Celto-Brythonic migrations to the British Isles. The greater availability of iron, facilitated land clearance and the growth of population. The settlements were also of a distinctly Brythonic type – with the traditional round house; with the ‘Celtic’ system of farming with characteristic fields; and with storage pits for grain.

The distinctive export of Cornish tin – noted before B.C. 300 by the Greek explorer Pytheas of Massilia – continued during the second century B.C. Evidence of the destination of that exported metal is provided by a very large hoard of North-Italian silver coins found at Paul in Cornwall.

In the first century B.C., this trade was in the hands of the Celtic *Venati* (of Brittany). At that time, the coinage of Britain resembled the bronze coins of Massilia a century earlier. These British coins circulated mainly in Southeastern England, and early during the first century B.C. Also gold coins of the Gaulish *Bellovaci* were then

introduced, probably by trade. The best Brythonic coins well illustrate the Celtic art of Britain.

From about B.C. 20 onward, it is possible to distinguish two principal powers in Britain. North of the Thames were the *Catuvellons* – led by Tasciovan, the B.C. 55f successor of Julius Caesar’s adversary Cassivellon. South of the Thames was the kingdom of Atrebat – ruled by Commi and his sons (Tincom, Eppill and Veric).

Tasciovan was succeeded around A.D. 5 by his son Cunobelin alias Cymbeline. He, during a long reign, established a paramount power all over the Southeast.

Beyond these kingdoms, lay: the *Iceni* in what is now Norfolk; the *Coritans* in the Midlands; the *Dobuns* in the area of Gloucestershire; and the *Durotrigs* in that of Dorset – all of whom issued coins. Behind these again, lay further independent tribes – the *Dumnon*s of Devon; the *Brigants* of Yorkshire; and the *Silurians* and *Ordovicians* in Wales.

It seems the family of the British Prince Caradoc was added to the Church by Hebrew Christian Missionaries straight from Palestine. That would have occurred – probably even before the successful Pagan Roman invasion of Britain.

Then, under General Aulus Plautius, a Roman Army of four legions was assembled. A landing was made at Richborough, Kent, in A.D. 43. The Britons were under Togodum and Caradoc, the sons and successors of Cunobelin.

However, even by the year 47 – when Plautius was succeeded as Commanding Officer by Ostorius Scapula – the tribes in Wales still remained intransigent. They were spurred on by Caradoc. This intransigence caused Scapula to cross the Lowlands beyond the Fosse Way, and to advance up to the River Severn in the year 49.

There was another Anti-Roman uprising in Britain around A.D. 60f – by Boadicea, Queen of the *Iceni*. With the occupation of Wales by Julius Frontinus (the Roman Governor of occupied Britain from 74 to 78 A.D.), and also with the advance into the south of Northern Scotland by Gnaeus Julius Agricola (78-84), troops were removed from Southern Britain. The conquest of Wales was complete by 78. However, Agricola’s invasion of parts of Scotland still failed to complete the occupation of the whole island.

A frontier would therefore need to be maintained in the North. After several experiments, the Solway-Tyne isthmus was chosen. There, the Roman Emperor Hadrian built his stone wall (*circa* 122-130 A.D.). Yet even south of Hadrian’s Wall – especially in the countryside – the Celtic tongue continued to be spoken very widely. Thus the *Encyclopaedia Britannica*.

\* \* \* \* \*

Second. There is the testimony of the very great Swiss-American Reformed Theologian, Rev. Professor Dr. Philip Schaff. His 1910 multi-volume *History of the Christian Church* (IV:27) declares that Britain appeared in secular history half a century before the Christian Era – when Julius Caesar sailed with a Roman army

## INTRODUCTION

across the Channel . The oldest inhabitants of the British Isles – the Irish, the Scots, and the Gauls – were Celts.

Their priests were called druids. The word ‘druid’ is a Celtic term (*draiod* meaning: sage). The Irish Scriptures use *draiod* for *magi* (alias ‘wise-men’) at Matthew 2:1. They were even then in possession of much education and spiritual power – and they professed to know the secrets of nature, medicine, and the arts. **They taught ‘obedience to the Laws of God;** concern for the good of man; and fortitude under the accidents of life. – Thus Diognetus Laertius, on the druids of Ancient Britain.

As regards the first introduction of Christianity into Britain, continues Dr. Schaff, the British Prince Bran (and his son Caradoc) is said to have become acquainted with Paul. Eusebius (*Demonstratio Evangelica* II:5), speaks as if some of the Twelve (Luke 9:1f) or of the Seventy (Luke 10:1f) had ‘crossed the Ocean to the Isles called British.’

A visit by St. Paul to Britain between A.D. 63 and 67 is indeed not impossible, and has been advocated by scholars like Ussher and Stillingfleet. Indeed, the A.D. 91f Clement of Rome’s *Epistle to the Corinthians* (ch. 5) – states that Paul carried the gospel ‘to the end of the West’ etc. That latter expression has been taken by many to refer precisely to the Western Isles, viz. the westernmost islands of Europe (Britain, Anglesey, the Scilly Isles, Man, and Ireland etc.).

Some Galatian converts of Paul, visiting ‘the far West’ to barter the cloths of their native land for the useful metal of Britain, may have been the first to have made the Gospel known to the Britons in their kindred Celtic tongue. See J.B. Lightfoot’s *Commentary on Galatians*. The connection of Britain with Gaul in the West as well as with Gaul-asia in the East, must then have brought it early into contact with Christianity.

About A.D. 208, St. Tertullian of Carthage exultingly declared ‘that places in Britain not yet visited by Romans were subject to Christ’ (*Against the Jews*, ch. 7). Godly Bishop Kaye in his work *Tertullian* understands this passage as referring to the farthest extremities of Britain.

Dr. Schaff concludes that Constantine, the A.D. 314f first Christian Emperor of the Roman Empire, was born in Britain; and that his mother, St. Helena, was probably a native of the country. Records of the British Church during that period still exist at Canterbury, Caerleon, Bangor, Glastonbury, Dover, Richborough, Reculver, Lyminge, Brixworth, and other places. From this, some Historians have inferred the Eastern origin of the Old British Church. Indeed – its many peculiarities must be traced to its insular isolation from Rome.

\* \* \* \* \*

Third. There is Ancient Anglo-Saxon Law – imported into Britain from Eastern Germany via Northwest Germany and Southern Denmark by the Angles, Saxons and Jutes in A.D. 429f. Here, the 1986 *Encyclopaedia Britannica* (22:922f) declares that Germanic Law covers the various peoples of that stock from early times – until Germanic tribes developed national territorial laws. Knowledge of the early period –

is derived mainly from the observations contained in Julius Caesar's (58f B.C.) *Gallic War* and Tacitus's (98 A.D.) *Germania*.

The Anglo-Saxon laws of the North Germanic groups are in the vernacular. They owe their written form largely to the advent of Christianity. The Anglo-Saxons – especially after the accession of the great Christian King, Alfred the Great (in 871 A.D.) – developed a body of rules resembling those current among the Teutonic peoples of Northern Europe.

Fourth. The 1986 *Encyclopaedia Britannica* (22:929f) states that English Common Law – the Customary Law based on judicial decisions and embodied in reports – originated in the Early Middle Ages in decisions of local courts. Saxon practice lingered. Even the (A.D. 1066f) Normans resisted any attempt to introduce Roman Law. Indeed, *Magna Carta* in 1215 insisted on rehabilitating the Anglo-Brythonic Common Law – from the earliest times, and right down to the last Saxon King Edward the Confessor.

Fifth. At the very beginning of the informative 1970 law book *Signed, Sealed and Delivered: An Introduction to Australian Commercial Principles* – one reads that in Late Mediaeval times the Lord Chancellor was asked ‘for the love of God and in the way of charity...to do what truth, good faith and conscience required’ (and to see that right was done).

This was reflected also in the *Magna Carta* of 1215 A.D. It is well articulated in the great British Common Law writers such as Lord Chief Justice Sir Edward Coke and Law Professor Sir William Blackstone.

Indeed, as Queensland University Law Professor R.D. Lumb observed just a decade ago, it is Blackstone's writings which governed the law brought to Australia in the 1770's by Captain James Cook. See Lumb's 1983 book *Australian Constitutionalism* (pp. 25-68).

\* \* \* \* \*

Sixth. There is the historic Coronation Oath – most recently administered in 1953 to the reigning Head of the British Commonwealth, Queen Elizabeth II. She was then given a Bible, and enjoined: ‘Our gracious Queen, we present you with this Book, the most valuable thing that this world affords. Here is wisdom. This is the Royal Law.’ Cf. James 2:8-12.

Queen Elizabeth was then given first a sword and then an orb. By a leading cleric, she was then commanded: ‘With this Sword, do justice; stop the growth of iniquity; protect the holy Church of God; help and defend widows and orphans; restore the things that are gone to decay; maintain the things that are restored; punish and reform what is amiss!...

‘Receive this Orb set under the Cross, and remember that the whole world is subject to the Power and Empire of Christ our Redeemer!... The Lord give you faithful Parliaments and quiet Realms; sure defence against all enemies; fruitful lands and a prosperous industry; wise counsellors and upright magistrates; leaders of

INTRODUCTION

integrity in learning and labour; a devout, learned, and useful clergy; honest, peaceable, and dutiful citizens [cf. Lev. 26 and Deut. 28]!

The leading cleric then prayed: `Almighty and everliving God..., grant that all they that do confess Thy holy Name may agree in the truth of Thy Holy Word, and live in unity and godly love. We beseech Thee also to save and defend all Christian Kings, Princes, and Governors, and specially Thy servant Elizabeth our Queen: that under her we may be godly and quietly governed; and grant unto her whole Council, and to all that are put in authority under her, that they may truly and indifferently administer justice - to the punishment of wickedness and vice, and to the maintenance of Thy true religion and virtue [cf. First Timothy 2:1-2 & First Peter 2:12-15].... Through Jesus Christ our Lord, Amen!\_

\* \* \* \* \*

Seventh. U.S. Law rests chiefly on the Biblical Anglo-British Common Law resulting from the fusion of Celto-Brythonic and Anglo-Saxon concepts. As the 1929 *Encyclopaedia Britannica* (I:777f) claims in its article on *American Law*, the Colonists brought with them as a birthright (along with English political precedents) the Common Law: its concepts of property, liberty and justice; and such of its rules as fitted colonial conditions. Colonies endeavoured to follow it from an early day. In several, this position was accorded to the Holy Scriptures themselves.

The formal adoption of the Common Law after the 1776 *Declaration of Independence* as the basis of American Law in judicial practice, suited to American conditions, set an ideal. When Mr. Justice Kent was appointed to the New York Bench in 1798, there were no Law Reports for that State. In his twenty-five years as Judge and Chancellor, he not only gave form to the entire Law of that State but made an unrivalled contribution to the Law of the whole Country. Equity too was developed, with relative consistency.

\* \* \* \* \*

Eighth. On Oct. 4th 1982, the Congress of the United States of America passed the following *Joint Resolution*. It authorized and requested the President to proclaim 1983 as the :Year of the Bible~ thus:

`Whereas the Bible, the Word of God, has made a unique contribution in shaping the United States as a distinctive and blessed nation and people; Whereas deeply-held religious convictions springing from the Holy Scriptures led to the early settlement of our Nation; Whereas Biblical teachings inspired concepts of civil government that are contained in our *Declaration of Independence* and the *Constitution of the United States*;

`Whereas many of our great national leaders - among them Presidents Washington, Jackson, Lincoln, and Wilson - paid tribute to the surpassing influence of the Bible in our country's development, as in the words of President Jackson that the Bible is :the rock on which our Republic rests~; Whereas this Nation now faces great challenges that will test this Nation as it has never been tested before; and Whereas that renewing our knowledge of and faith in God through Holy Scripture can strengthen us as a nation....

Now, therefore, be it resolved by the Senate and House of Representatives of the U.S.A. in Congress assembled, that the President is authorized and requested to designate 1983 as a national Year of the Bible in recognition of both the formative influence the Bible has been for our Nation, and our national need to study and apply the teachings of the Holy Scriptures. \_

\* \* \* \* \*

Ninth. In the February 1987 issue of the magazine *The Kingdom Voice*, there appeared an article titled *Britain's Place in Christian History*. It discussed some of the statements made by Dr. Billy Graham during his 1963 Hour of Decision Campaign in London. Among other matters, the article cited the following comments then made by Dr. Graham:

Here is a little island...which has influenced the nations of the world more than any spot of land on earth. Back of Britain's mighty material, temporal and military power was spiritual and moral power. It was some time in the first century of the Christian era, that the Gospel first came to England [Isaiah 41:1-5; 42:4-12; 49:1-23; Acts 8:4; 11:19-21].

Britain has been the greatest Christian nation of all time. During the past five hundred years, Britain has contributed more to the world spiritually, than any other nation. It was here that the Reformation actually began under the leadership of John Wycliffe, in the fourteenth century [cf. Daniel 12:1-7].

It was Wycliffe who gave the Bible to the people. He rebelled against the ready-made dogmas of an established church, and rejected all those teachings which could not bear the test of the Scriptures [cf. Daniel 12:11].... It was John Wycliffe who strongly influenced John Huss of Bohemia [cf. Daniel 12:12], who in turn started a chain of thought and reaction [cf. Revelation 14:6-9] which eventually influenced Martin Luther [cf. Revelation 16:10] and changed the maps of the world and its history.

Socially, morally, materially, spiritually Britain has contributed tremendously to the American way of life. Britain taught us tolerance, fair play, and freedom from frenzy. It was British money which supported Christian work in America for over a hundred years.

The foundations which lie so secure for many of our denominations today, were supported largely from Great Britain. America owes a debt of gratitude to this country [of Britain] which we will never be able to pay. She has been our closest ally in war and in peace. It is from her that we even get our language. \_

\* \* \* \* \*

Last. In his 1959 book *Law and Civilization*, Chicago's famous John Marshall Law School Professor Palmer D. Edmunds calls Anglo-American Common Law: Immutable Principles of Justice Translated into Experience. He explains U.S. President Madison once said Common Law has been called a birthright. For the cardinal principles of justice are immutable.



## INTRODUCTION

No student of jurisprudence would be so superficial as to overlook the indebtedness of the Common Law to the civilizations which preceded its advent. The Common Law antedates formal legislatures. In the United States it derives from the Common Law of England, Hebrew Law, the human conscience, the sense of justice, what seems "right" and religious teachings.

When Englishmen came to America, they brought with them the Common Law. To this day, there are legislative enactments on the statute books of many of the United States evidencing its formal recognition. The Illinois statute is typical. It provides: "The Common Law of England, so far as the same is applicable and of a general nature, and all statutes or acts of the British Parliament made in aid of...the Common Law [till 1775 A.D.]..., shall be the rule of decision and shall be considered in full force until repealed by legislative authority."

Even in recent years, the courts of America have found it necessary at times to examine the laws and constitutional principles of England. Sir Maurice Sheldon Amos indicated its broad expanse, when he said that the Common Law displays throughout "the marks of the system of government administered in the Middle Ages at Westminster. The people of the United States live under the Common Law system. Thus Professor Edmunds (*op. cit.* pp. 343-49).

\* \* \* \* \*

By way of guidelines, we ourselves now state seven preliminary propositions. These guidelines represent the framework within which the rest of the investigations of this dissertation will be conducted.

1. God made the world and both Adam and Eve as the sole first ancestors of the entire human race. To them He gave His Moral Law, writing it on their hearts. This was the original **Common Law** for all mankind as their descendants. In spite of man's fall, its substance still remains. Thus it constitutes the basis of God's assessment of man, both now and at the Final Judgment. Ecclesiastes 7:29 & 12:13f and Romans 2:14-16.
2. After the Great Flood, God repeated His original injunctions for Adam and his seed - also to Noah and all his descendants. God then clearly established human government, and human penalties for crimes. For God then declared to the entire human race: "Be fruitful and multiply and fill the earth! ... Whosoever sheds human blood, shall have his blood shed by man - for God created man as His image." This too was God's **Common Law** - for all mankind. Genesis 1:26-28; 4:5-14; 9:1-7 *cf.* Acts 15:18-21 & 15:28f.
3. When the Most High God divided to the nations their inheritance and separated the sons of Adam, He set the boundaries of the people according to the number of the children of Israel (His very own covenant people). Also the Israelites were tainted by sin. However, in their case they also received God's special revelation and His Statutes in Holy Scripture - to guide and to preserve them. Yet the Moral Law still remained the **Common Law** for all nations everywhere. Genesis 11:1-27f; Exodus 20:1-17; Deuteronomy 7:15f & 32:8; Hosea 6:7-10; Acts 17:24-29.

4. At the postdiluvian division of mankind into the different nations then emerging, by His grace the Almighty permitted especially the sons of Japheth to dwell in the tents of the Lord God of the Shemites as the covenant people. Those sons of Japheth included: his firstborn (Gomer) and his Gomic alias Cymric descendants (the Ancient Britons); Magog alias the Scyths (and the Iro-Scots as their descendants); Ashkenaz alias the Anglo-Saxons (from Ancient Germany); and Tarshish alias the Ancient Celtiberians. Consequently God's primordial revelation in general, and Christianity in particular as its fulfilment and completion, was to remain present especially among the Western Europeans. In particular, it would thrive among the insulated Gomic Ancient Britons and the Ancient Irish - with their **Common Law** (of which both God's primordial revelation and Christianity are part and parcel). Genesis 9:27 to 10:2f.
5. Now the knowledge of God's **Law** is **common** to all men. For He has not left Himself without witness even among the heathen. Indeed, whenever pagans who do not have the Law, by nature do the things contained in the Law - they are a law unto themselves. Thus, they still show that the work of the Law remains written on their hearts. Their conscience also bears witness. Indeed, their thoughts meanwhile accuse or else excuse one another - and shall further do so, in the day when God shall judge the secrets of men by Jesus Christ according to the Gospel. Acts 14:15-17 & 17:22-29 cf. Romans 1:18 to 2:16.
6. Consequently, there are indeed some few elements of righteousness even in pagan customs. However, there are far more elements of righteousness in **British Common Law**. This is because of its massive exposure to God's special revelation in general and to Christianity in particular for many centuries, especially prior to the French Revolution of 1789 A.D. On the situation prior to 1789, see Lord Chief Justice Sir Edward Coke and Law Professor Sir William Blackstone. Compare our *Addenda* 1, 2 & 27 below.
7. Since 1789, there has been an ongoing corruption of legal systems - even in the Common Law countries (although much less there than elsewhere). Whatsoever God regards as evil in Western civilization - should be abandoned for extinction. However, the bulk of Western civilization before 1788 was good. British (alias Anglo/American/Australian) **Common Law** was, and is, its covenantal crown. As such, it should be respected and protected. Indeed, it is truly destined for certain expansion - even internationally. Isaiah 2:2-21; Habakkuk 2:14-20; Revelation 15:1-4.

\* \* \* \* \*

Here we now rest our case for the present. For we believe we have just established at least the importance of our chosen subject: *Roots and Fruits of the Common Law* - as found today in Great Britain, the United States, and the Commonwealth of Australia.

In this dissertation, unless otherwise stated, all emphases are our own. We will trace in detail the Biblical and Christian roots of Iro-Scottish, Celto-Brythonic, and Anglo-Saxon Common Law. Throughout, our stress is not on American or Australian Law, but rather on the Biblical and Anglo-British Common Law (in which the Common Law also of America and Australia roots).

## INTRODUCTION

Thus, in the Bible, the Pre-Mosaic international death penalty for murder was repeated later also for the Mosaic nation. God told Noah, the great "second Adam" and new forefather of the whole human race: "Whosoever sheds man's blood, by mankind shall his blood be shed. For God made man in His image." Genesis 9:5f. Later, the same God told Moses: "He who murders anybody, shall surely be put to death.... Eye for eye, tooth for tooth. As he has caused a blemish in a man, so shall it be done also to him.... You shall have the same kind of law for somebody of your own country, as well as for the stranger." Leviticus 24:1,17-22.

This was and is a guideline for every nation, and therefore also for British Common Law. As the great Puritan Dr. John Owen told the English Parliament on 26th April 1646: "In the very morning of the Gospel, the Sun of righteousness shone upon this land.... The first potentate of the Earth that owned it, was in Britain.... "Oh, that we could remember the days of old! ... God will again water His garden; once more purge His vineyard; once more, of His own accord, He will take England upon liking.... The reformation of England shall be more glorious than of any nation in the World - being carried on neither by might nor power, but only by the Spirit of the Lord of hosts!"



# CHRONOLOGICAL DEVELOPMENT OF COMMON LAW

Biblical, Iro-Scottish, Brythonic, & Anglo-Saxon  
showing its impact on Great Britain, the United States, and Australia

DATES	SPECIFIC EVENTS, PERSONS, PEOPLES AND PARTICULARS
Eternity .....	The everlastingly righteous one true Triune God alone (Gen. 1:1-3; Ex. 34:6-7; John 17:1-5,24-25; I Cor. 1:30; 2:10f)
Creation.....	God righteously shapes His universe under His Law, displaying His glory (Ps. 119:89f; 148:1-5; Jer. 31:35f; 33:20)
4000 B.C .....	Adam: God writes His Law on heart of ancestor of all mankind in Eden (Gen. 1:26f; 2:7-17; Ps. 19:1-7f; Eccl. 7:29; Rom. 2:16f; Jas. 2:8f)
4000f.....	Even fallen man is required righteously to image the just God Himself (Gen. 5:1-5; 9:5-6; I Cor. 11:7; Jas. 3:9)
3985f.....	Abel regenerated, through Christ, into a righteous and a law-abiding person (Gen. 3:15 - 4:4; Matt. 23:35; Eph. 4:24)
3970 .....	Cain wickedly merits the `natural law_ death penalty (Gen. 4:7-14; Ezek. 18:4-13; Rom. 1:18-32; Jas. 1:23-25)
2600 .....	Ireland allegedly inhabited before Noah's flood ( <i>Irish Chronicles</i> compare Gen. 4:12-24; 5:1-32; 6:1-13)
2500 .....	Godly Noah on the Mountains of Ararat institutes human law courts, by God's decree, after the great flood (Gen. 6:9-22; 9:5-11f; Ezek. 14:14-20)
2450 .....	The blessing on Shem goes initially not to Ham but to the Japheth-ites (Gen. 9:18-27 & 10:1-5 and I Chron. 1:1-7)
2440f.....	Noah on the Japhethites: `God shall enlarge Japheth, and he shall dwell in the tents of Shem_ (Gen. 9:27)
2430f.....	The European sons of Japheth: Gomer, Magog, Madai, Javan, Tubal, Meshech, Tiras, Tarshish <i>etc.</i> (Gen. 10:2-4)
2420 .....	Babelic dispersion, with the <i>jus gentium</i> , into all the world (Gen. 10:25; 11:1f; Deut. 32:8; Jer. 1:7f; Acts 17:22f)
2410 .....	Japhethitic Gomer-ites trek from Transcaucasia to Cimmer-ia (in the modern Ukraine), and later <i>via</i> Europe toward Britain (Gen. 10:1-5 <i>cf.</i> Isa. 49:1-12)

COMMON LAW: ROOTS AND FRUITS

- 2400..... The Japhethitic sons of Gomer (Cymri *etc.*) go to `the isles of the Gentiles\_ (Gen. 10:2-5)
- 2380..... Migration of some Japhethites toward Tarshish alias Iberia or Spain/Portugal (Gen. 10:4)
- 2350..... Heber's Heb(e)r-ews dispersed even toward (H)Iber-ia or Spain and, later, Hiber-nia or Ireland (Gen. 10:24f & 11:16)
- 2340f..... The Westward-moving sons of Gomer, Ashkenaz & Riphath & Togarmah, trek westward down Danube & Rhine across Europe toward `the isles\_ (Gen. 10:5)
- 2330..... Sea migration of some Tarshish-ites (Basques *cf.* Picts?) from Spain/Portugal toward the British Isles (*Irish Chronicles*)
- 2300..... Arrival of first Japhethites overland in Britain, and thence further into Ireland (*cf.* Gen. 10:5)
- 2250..... Coming of Japhethitic Gaels to Ireland from Britain and from Spain/Portugal (*Irish Chronicles*)
- 2200f..... Japhethites practise agriculture, and mine gold, especially in Ireland - and copper & tin & some gold in Britain
- 2150f..... Ireland: constitutional government, regional sovereignty, and qualified franchise (*Law of Tanistry*)
- 2100..... Britain: building of Avebury and Durrington Walls near the later Stonehenge
- 2000..... Tyre already becoming a great Phoenician sea-faring power
- 1900f..... Hu Gadarn's first Welsh *Triads* (= legal and philosophical writings) later augmented from time to time till 450f A.D.
- 1860..... Canaan: Abraham keeps God's Law and Statutes and teaches them to his descendants (Gen. 18:18f & 26:6)
- 1850..... Britain: early inhabitants build Stonehenge and make bronze implements
- 1830..... Canaan: Abraham teaches his son Isaac and others the Law of God (Gen. 18:19)
- 1800..... Mesopotamia: *Codex Hammurabi* Law Code, in spite of some degeneration, derived from Noah and Shem
- 1770..... Isaac teaches God's Law to his household (Gen. 25:21f & 26:5)
- 1760..... God foretells Jacob or Israel that his seed would `spread abroad to the west\_ *etc.* (Gen. 28:4)

*CHRONOLOGICAL DEVELOPMENT OF  
COMMON LAW*

- 1750f.....Canaan: Abraham's grandson Jacob begets twelve sons, including Judah (Gen. chs. 29 & 30)
- 1730f.....Troy: Judah's son Zerah's descendant Darda allegedly founds the Dardanelles (Gen. 38:30; I Chr. 2:6; I Kgs. 4:31)
- 1720f.....Invasion of Egypt by Hyksos (= Israel-ites?) - cf. Josephus's *Against Apion* 1:14
- 1690 .....Egypt: Jacob blesses the progenitors of the twelve tribes of Israel (Gen. ch. 49, esp. v. 10)
- 1500 .....British alias Western Isles: gold and pearls and copper and tin produced and exported to the Near East
- 1500f.....Greece: Gathel the Gael, from the North, goes to Egypt
- 1450f.....Egypt: Gathel the Gael, from Egypt, goes to Spain
- 1440f.....Egypt: Moses and the Israelites leave for Canaan; are reminded of the Law of God at Mt. Sinai (Ex. 20:1-17f); and Cai takes that Common Law to Ireland.
- 1430f.....Egypt: Dan-ites perhaps go to Greece, Troy, Dan-ube, Dan-mark, Ireland, etc. (compare Judg. 5:17 & II Chron. 2:14)
- 1400 .....Gathel's sons Hiber and Himec go to Ireland, while Moses repeats Decalogue near the Jordan (Deut. 4:47 - 5:1f)
- 1383 .....Ireland: King Ollamh Fodhla fathers that nation's Law and its Confederate Parliament at Tara.
- 1300 .....Phoenician ships (some with Danite Hebrew crew-members?) haul tin from Britain to Tyre and Sidon and Palestine
- 1185 .....Troy: after the fall of the city - Darda's descendant Brut(us) allegedly goes to Brut-ain (= Brit-ain)
- 1150 .....Britain: Brut's Brit-ish Laws (from the Patriarchs, *via* Troy?)
- 1000f.....British tin and copper, *via* Phoenician merchants, used in Solomon's temple?
- 930 .....Britain: Cumbrian King Leill builds Caer-Leill (Carlisle) and promotes justice and peace
- 850 .....Homer's *Iliad*, about Troy, calls Greeks 'Danaans' and mentions Cimmerians (= Cymric Celts?) before their migration
- 810 .....Africa: Phoenicians from Tyre etc. establish Carthage as trading city also for Spain and Britain

COMMON LAW: ROOTS AND FRUITS

- 796..... Israel: Jonah pays the fare for a voyage from Joppa to Tarshish alias Spain, and sets sail (Jonah 1:3)
- 750..... Tyre: Phoenician ships dominate even the East Atlantic Ocean (Ezekiel chapter 27 and Herodotus's *History*)
- 753..... Rome: traditional date given for the establishment of that Italian city A.U.C. (*Anno Urbe Condita*)
- 721..... Israel: ten tribes go into Assyrian Captivity (II Kgs. 15:29f; 17:6,23; 18:11; I Chr. 5:26)
- 700..... Israel: the banished House of Omri or Beth-Omri = Bit-Humri (alias Gomer-ian Cimmerians?)
- 666f..... Assyrians, *via* Palestine, subjugate the Egyptians
- 650..... Spain: Hiber-ians (= Heber-ews?) colonize New H-Iber-ia (= Hiber-nia = Ireland); and, later, Scotland (Holinshed)
- 630f..... Scythians = Saka (= Saxons?) push Gomer-Cimmer (as Cymri?) into Cimmeria = Crim-*ea* (Hos. 1:3; Jer. 51:27)
- 621..... Greece: Athenian Draco codifies in blood rather than in ink the harsh pagan customs punishing involuntary homicide
- 594..... Greece: Solon, perhaps under Dan-ite influence, mitigates the Laws of Athens towards constitutional government
- 587..... Judah: two tribes go into Babylonian captivity; Jeremiah (43:2-7f *cf.* 50:9f,41f & 51:27f), *via* Egypt, to Ireland?
- 555f..... Ashkenaz (= Scythians or Saxons?) help Persia attack Babylon, Jer. 50:9 & 51:27
- 550f..... Cymric Celts driven into Britain as the B.C. 500f Britons, the ancestors of the Welsh (Isa. 42:7; 49:1-12; 66:19)
- 544f..... Iro-Scots from Ireland colonize the Hebrides (= Hebrew-ides?) and Argyle (= Gael-Land) in Southwestern Scotland
- 540f..... Cymri absorb and/or expel Gaels from Britain into Ireland and/or Scotland
- 530..... Phoenician Admiral Hamilco visits the British (and the Irish?), and says that they are skilful in art\_ and busy in trade\_ (Avienus)
- 520..... Britain: many Cymric Celts arrive from Europe, establishing Cymric Cambria in the West and Cumbria in the Northwest of Southern Britain
- 510f..... Britain: Celtic Mulmutine Laws of Dunvallo Moelmud, updating the B.C. 1150 Laws of Brut (*Welsh Triads*)



*CHRONOLOGICAL DEVELOPMENT OF  
COMMON LAW*

- 495.....Greek Hecataeus admires `sacred\_ city near Stonehenge in Britain, where he says that God is praised on golden harps (Diodorus)
- 480.....Britain: very gradual decline from its primordial religion, in spite of continuing common grace, into Druid-ism
- 475f.....Britain's druids still urged: `obedience to the Laws of God\_ and `concern for the good of man\_ (Diogenetus Laertius)
- 455f.....Britain: Mulmutine Laws proclaimed the `Common Law\_ by Moelmud's son Belin (thus Geoffrey Arthur of Monmouth)
- 450f.....Rome: `Twelve Tables\_ Law Code, influenced by the laws of Solon, reduced to writing (perverted from the earlier Decalogue?)
- 440.....Herodotus on the Westward migrations of the Phoenicians and Scythians
- 430f.....Britain: trades in bronze with Carthage, Ireland & Gaul - and, in amber, with the Baltic (from the Germanic Dan-mark to the then-Germanic Estonia)
- 425f.....France: some Celts or Gauls from the East (*cf.* Gaul-asia in modern Turkey) reach France (alias Gall-ia)
- 420f.....Britain: evidence of Israelitic and even Judean influence on Cornish tin mines (*cf.* Acts 1:8 & 15:21)
- 400.....Gal-atia: Celts settle Gaul-asia (in the modern Turkey), linking it to Celtic Gaul and Celtic Britain (Lightfoot)
- 390f.....British Prince Brenn and other Celtic Cimmerians invade and overthrow Rome
- 360f.....Spain: more Basques and Scyths (from the Crimea and *via* Spain) go to Ireland and to Pictavia (in Northern Scotland)
- 350f.....Britain, beyond the Pillars of Hercules or the Straits of Gibraltar, called `Albion\_ by the great philosopher Aristotle
- 330.....Dionysius Periegeetes describes voyages to a `sacred\_ Isle to the West of Europe (= Britain and/or Ireland)
- 327f.....King Ferg I the Iro-Scot settles in Western Scotland (Caledonia)
- 320f.....Greek geographer Pytheas of Massilea circumperambulates and records a description of Britain and her civilization
- 297f.....Queen Martia preserves old laws and enacts new laws, and thus perpetuates the British Commonwealth

COMMON LAW: ROOTS AND FRUITS

- 200f..... The Caledonian King Reutha promotes the arts and sciences in Northern Britain
- 170f..... King Josina's religious reforms in Northern Britain (the later Scotland)
- 120f..... Dan-mark: the (Dan-ite?) Cimbri (alias the Cimmerians?) successfully attack Rome
- 106f..... I Macc. 5:23 implies Spartan Greeks may be related to the Hebrews (*cf.* Ezek. 27:19 & Josephus's *Ant.* 12:4:10 & 13:5:8)
- 100f..... King Finnan instals druids on the Isle of Man and/or on the copper-rich island of Anglesey
- 90f..... The geographer and historian and philosopher Poseidonius of Rhodes writes about Britain in some detail
- 80f..... The Celtic Belgae go to Britain, and later fight off the Romans when latter unsuccessfully invade what is now Southern England under Julius Caesar
- 75f..... Britain: Avalon or Ynys Witrin (alias Glastonbury) and Lundain (or London) both become international trading centres
- 72f..... Crimea: Prince Sigga of Azov leads the Saxons to Northwest Europe (from Crim-*ea* of the Cimmer-ians)
- 60f..... Greek historian Diodorus Siculus praises accomplishments of the Britons and notes much Greek influence in Britain
- 55..... Caledonian King Eder assists the British Chief Caswallon against Julius Caesar
- 55f..... Rome: Julius Caesar's skirmishes in, and impressions of, Britain (and also of their kindred Gauls and the Germans)
- 54..... Britain: Julius Caesar's invasion defeated, and his Romans expelled by the defending Britons
- 50f..... Britain the chief naval power of, and also the cultural centre for, the whole of Northwestern Europe (Julius Caesar)
- 29f..... Rome: Vergil's *Aeneid* describes the Post-Trojan journeys of Aeneas
- 25f..... II Esdras chs. 11-13 alleges the ten lost tribes of Israel had left Assyria, so `that they might keep their own law`
- 20f..... Britain offers its chief *cors* or colleges for the training of druidic priests then to serve also in Western Europe
- 15f..... Greece: Strabo says British merchants bring corn and cattle and iron to Europe

*CHRONOLOGICAL DEVELOPMENT OF  
COMMON LAW*

- 10f.....Jewish synagogues throughout Southern Europe (Acts 15:31) - and even in Britain? (thus apocryphal Acts ch. 29:8)
- 5f.....Hebrew (Danite) and/or Phoenician trade between Palestine and Britain's Avalon or Ynys Witrin (alias Glastonbury) and probably also the harbours of ancient Eastern and Southern Ireland
- 0.....SECOND ADAM JESUS CHRIST incarnated: `the Isles wait for His Law!\_ (Isa. 42:4-12,21 *cf.* 49:10)
- 2 A.D ..... `Wise-men\_ - Irish Bible (at Matt. 2:1f) says they were `druids` - visit the infant Jesus from faraway lands
- 15.....Christ the living Law grows to maturity, Heb. 10:7-16 *cf.* Luke 2:40-52 *etc.* (visiting Britain?)
- 33.....Judah: death and resurrection of the Lord Jesus Christ, followed by His Great Commission to His Church (Matt. 28:19 & Acts 1:8)
- 34f.....Christians flee Judah as `strangers\_ (Acts 8:1 *cf.* Jas. 1:1 & I Pet. 1:1), some becoming `Culdees` in Britain?
- 35f.....Britain reached with the Gospel early, and allegedly by Hebrew-Christian Missionaries (*cf.* Isa. 49:1-12 & Acts 11:19)
- 36.....Ireland: alleged to have been visited and somewhat evangelized by the apostle James
- 37f.....Britain recorded to have heard the Gospel from Joseph of Arimathea especially in Avalon or Ynys Witrin (Glastonbury)
- 39f.....Britain: first members of Royal Family converted? (Bran, Pomponia-Gladys, Claudia, *cf.* II Tim. 4:21?)
- 40.....Britain: Irish Christian Mansuet baptized; becomes a Missionary; and later martyred in Illyria (Albania)
- 40f.....Britain: druids (thus Suetonius), perhaps long influenced by Pre-Christian British Synagogues, now hear of Jesus
- 43.....The Roman Emperor, Caesar Claudius, invades Southeast Britain (*cf.* Acts 11:28 & 18:2)
- 43f.....Britain: Roman General Vespasian fights thirty battles (some together with his son Titus) against the Britons
- 44f.....The apostles Simon Zelotes (twice), and Paul & Peter (each at least once), all reputed to have evangelized in Britain
- 50.....British druids patriotically resist the Pagan Roman invasion - and then view Christianity as an ally against Pagan Rome

COMMON LAW: ROOTS AND FRUITS

- 52..... Caradoc's British Royal Family, some already Christians, exiled to Rome by the Romans till 59 A.D. (Tacitus)
- 53..... The Gospel, having reached Galatia (Gal. 1:1), possibly preached by Celts from Galatia in Celtic Britain (Lightfoot)
- 54..... Britain: King Arvirag (Ard-an-rhaig) succeeded by his son Meric (or Meurig), who later sets up a monument in West-mor-land (named after Mer-ic)
- 54f..... Italy: Gospel first(?) reaches Rome, as the centre of world paganism (Rom. 1:7; 15:23f; 16:3f; Acts 2:10?)
- 55..... Italy: conversion of the rest of the exiled British Royal Family (Caradoc *etc.*) - thus the *Welsh Triads*
- 56..... Britain: Hebrew Christian Ilid, from Palestine, evangelizes the Britons
- 59..... Caradoc's Christian British Royal Family returns to Britain with Rom. 16:10's Aristobulus alias Arwysti (*Welsh Triads*)
- 60..... Some 'Scythians' (= Scot-s before migrating to Britain?) already christianized - Col. 3:11 *cf.* I Cor. 14:21
- 61..... Paulinus Suetonius in Britain. His Pagan Romans destroy druidic *Cor* in Mon alias the Welsh island of Anglesey (Tacitus)
- 62..... Pagan Romans rule Southeastern Britain, after defeating the British Queen Vuddig alias Boadicea (Tacitus)
- 62..... 'Almost-a-Christian' King Agrippa warns the Judaists Rome had subdued the Britons (Acts 26:1-28 & Josephus's *Wars* 2:16:3f)
- 62f..... Britain: many druidic priests become Christians (*cf.* Acts 6:7), turning their *cors* into Church Seminaries
- 63..... Ireland, it seems priorly reached by the apostle James, now visited by the British Christian Caradoc (thus ancient traditions)
- 64..... Rome: Pagan Romans kill the apostle Paul - after he had visited Britain? (Acts 13:47 *cf.* Col. 1:6 *etc.*)
- 64f..... Rome oppressed by Caesar Nero and his immediate successors, A.D. 64 to 70 (*cf.* Rev. ch. 17 and Tacitus *etc.*)
- 66f..... Rome annexes the conquered area of Southeast Britain (Josephus's *Wars* 6:6:2)
- 66f..... Pagan Romans surround Jerusalem (Matt. 24:15f); Vespasian's son Titus besieges it (Josephus, Suetonius & Tacitus)

*CHRONOLOGICAL DEVELOPMENT OF  
COMMON LAW*

- 70.....Jerusalem demolished by Roman General Titus and his Pagan Armies, Matt. ch. 24 *cf.* Rev. ch. 11 (and secular sources)
- 77.....Pagan Romans conquer the Britons in Wales (except in Pembrokeshire and in Caernarvonshire)
- 78.....Roman power consolidated throughout Southern Britain except in Devon & Cornwall, by Agricola (Tacitus)
- 83.....North Britain: Romans beat off the freedom-loving Caledonian Kellogg or Gwallog alias Galgacus or Gald (Tacitus)
- 85.....The Caledonian Gald defeats the Roman Agricola's successor Cneus Trebellius (Hector Boece)
- 87.....North Britain: Christian King Arvirag's son Prince Meric founds and names and rules in Cumbria's West-mor-land
- 93.....Britain: Cornwall, Western Wales, parts of Cumbria and all North Caledonia stay free from Pagan Rome
- 93f.....Josephus (*Antiquities* 12:4:10 & 13:5:8) assumes an earlier kinship between Hebrews & Greeks (*cf.* too at 60f B.C.)
- 94f.....Rome: Clement (I Ep. to Cor. ch. 5 *cf.* Phil. 4:3) implies Paul was in Britain before 64 A.D.
- 96.....British Christian missionary Beatt (alias Beatus), founder of the Swiss Church, martyred at Untersieben
- 98.....Roman Tacitus: Briton Pomponia (or Gladys), while in Britain, was apparently christianized even before about 49 A.D.
- 98f.....Tacitus writes about Celtic Britons and Germanic Angles and their laws (thus his *Annals*, his *Agricola*, and his *Germania*)
- 100f.....The Roman Suetonius - stationed in Britain - writes about the A.D. 37-41 Britons, their culture, and their religion
- 102f.....The Roman Pliny in his *Natural History* - having visited Britain - mentions the Britons and their educated druids
- 114.....Cumbrian Westmorland: birth of Meric's son Coill (= King Cole?)
- 119.....South Britain forcibly incorporated into the Roman Empire by treaty (so that non-statist British Common Law remained)
- 123f.....Pagan Roman Emperor Hadrian builds his Wall from Solway to the Tyne, thus (ineffectually) trying to segregate Free Britain from South Britain

COMMON LAW: ROOTS AND FRUITS

- 125 ..... Saxons (= Westbound Sakka?) from Eurasia - now in Denmark and Germany within Western Europe
- 127 ..... British Christian missionary Marcel(lus) works in Belgium and Germany
- 139 ..... The Pagan Emperor Antoninus sends Lollius Urbicus to Britain, to subdue the northern tribes which broke through Hadrian's Wall from Scotland
- 140 ..... Rev. Timotheus, son of British Christian Claudia (II Tim. 4:21), baptizes the British King Coill's son Prince Llew (Lucius)
- 156 ..... British King Llew (Lucius) proclaims Christianity as the regional religion in *Britannia* (thus Bede)
- 160f ..... British Christian missionaries strengthen the Churches of Gaul in France
- 170 ..... British Christian missionary Cadval founds the Church of Tarento in Italy
- 174f ..... Pagan Roman Emperor Marcus Aurelius had a Thundering Legion - all of the members of which worshipped Christ (thus Dion Cassius Cocceianus)
- 175 ..... Irish Prince Cormac is converted to Christianity
- 179 ..... British Christian King Llew (Lucius) establishes the first church in Lundain (St. Peter's Cornhill in London)
- 180 ..... Britons trouble the Pagan Roman Emperor Commodus (thus D.C. Cocceianus)
- 182 ..... The Wall is breached by the Caledonians, and Marcellus Ulpius is sent from Rome to restore Roman rule over the Southern Britons
- 190 ..... Tertullian (*Against the Jews* 9 & *Apology* 37): even the extra-Roman regions of Britain [meaning in the Far North & West]...have received Christianity\_
- 203 ..... Caledonian King Donald converted to Christianity (Hector Boece); Scots began to embrace the Christian Faith\_ (Fordun)
- 215 ..... Already three chief centres of British Christianity: London, York, & Caerleon
- 220f ..... Heretic Sabellius: the first nation that...called itself Christian...was Britain\_ (note well!)
- 230 ..... Egypt's Origen (*Hom. VI in Luke*): the goodness of the Saviour is...among the Britons\_

*CHRONOLOGICAL DEVELOPMENT OF  
COMMON LAW*

- 230f..... Sporadic spread of Christianity in Scotland during reigns of her kings Ethod II, Athirco, Natholoc and Findoc
- 235 ..... Hippolytus: Paul's Rom. 16:10 associate, Aristobulus, visited Britain (around 58 A.D.)
- 250 ..... East European Goths push Saxons deeper into Western Europe
- 286 ..... Alban was the first Christian Briton martyred in Britain (during persecution there at the hands of the Pagan Romans)
- 287 ..... British Admiral Carawn (Carausius) anointed as king over Britain and also of Northwestern Europe
- 288f..... Aaron and Julius of Caerleon, British Christians, martyred for their faith (by the Pagan Romans)
- 290f..... Nine Bishops and more than 10 000 communicants killed in Britain during the Pagan Caesar Diocletian's persecutions
- 295 ..... Roman Christian Pancras killed in Britain during Roman Diocletian's last 290-303 A.D. persecutions against Christianity
- 296 ..... Cestynn Chlorus, husband of the Christian Princess Helena and the father of Constantine, restores order in Britain
- 300 ..... Dorotheus: `Aristobulus [was]...made Bishop in Britain\_ where he (and the apostle Simon Zelotes) are said to be buried
- 301f..... Iro-Scottish King Crathlint's appointment of circuit judges and his making of peace with the Picts
- 310 ..... The Briton Prince Constantine (son of Cestynn and Princess Helen) becomes Caesar of the Roman Empire (thus Prof. Dr. Philip Schaff)
- 313 ..... Constantine becomes first Christian Caesar of, and ends the Anti-Christian persecutions throughout, the Roman Empire
- 314 ..... Christian Constantine convenes Trinitarian Church Council at Arles in Gaul (attended by 3 British out of 33 Bishops altogether)
- 320 ..... Eusebius (*Demonstratio Evangelica*): `Peter\_ and `the apostles\_ went `to the Isles called the Britannic\_
- 321 ..... The Briton, Emperor Constantine, makes Christianity the preferred religion throughout the Roman Empire
- 325 ..... Council of Nicaea. Athanasius, the teacher of Hilary, condemns Arius with the backing of the British Bishops
- 330f..... Regular battles in Westmorland between the Caledonians and the Romans

*COMMON LAW: ROOTS AND FRUITS*

- 337 ..... Constantine dies, and is allegedly buried in Britain near Caernarvon in Wales
- 347 ..... Athanasius says British Bishops supported him against Arianism at the Council of Sardica upholding the Trinity
- 350 ..... The Briton Ninian (alias Ringan), the later missionary to Scotland, born in Cumbria of Christian parents
- 353 ..... The Non-Roman Trinitarian Celt Hilary teaches Martin of Tours (the later mentor of Ninian) in the Celtic Church
- 360 ..... Several British Bishops attend the Council of Ariminum when summoned by Constantius
- 362 ..... Hilary says the `Bishops of...Britain\_ remained quite `free from...the detestable heresy\_ of Arianism
- 366 ..... Athanasius, in his letter to Emperor Jovian, says that the Britons were loyal to Christianity
- 369 ..... Ruill alias St. Rule (or Regulus) arrives in Scotland, together with the relics of the apostle Andrew (reputed to have preached in Scotland in earlier times)
- 370 ..... Martin of Tours, the uncle of the Briton Padraig alias Patrick, establishes the Celtic Churches in Kentish Canterbury
- 375 ..... Celtic Church's Martin of Tours teaches the Celto-Brythonic Culdee Christian Ninian of Cumbria
- 378 ..... Jerome: `Britain...resound[s] with the death and resurrection of Christ!\_
- 380 ..... The Christian, Emperor Theodosius I, makes Christianity the state religion of the Roman Empire
- 385 ..... The Welsh theologian Morgan (before later becoming the heretic Pelagius) claims Paul himself had started Morgan's abbey in Wales
- 390 ..... Cumbria: Trinitarian Celto-Briton Patrick born (his father being a deacon and his grandfather being a presbyter)
- 395 ..... Arnobius (about Christ): `His Word is concealed neither...in the East nor from the Britons\_
- 396 ..... Death of Martin of Tours, mentor of St Ninian of Cumbria, the great Brythonic Missionary to the Picts
- 397 ..... British missionary Ninian takes the Gospel to Northern Strathclyde (Southwest Caledonia) and beyond into Free Britain



*CHRONOLOGICAL DEVELOPMENT OF  
COMMON LAW*

- 398..... Roman withdrawal from Southern Britain - in order to protect Rome itself against Pagan attacks from Northern Europe
- 400f..... Cornwall and Wales pour Christian missionaries throughout Britain, and even into Europe
- 402..... Chrysostom: `The British Isles have received...the Word\_ - and `everywhere\_ discuss it
- 408..... Augustine: `How many churches are there not, erected in the British Isles?!\_
- 410..... Christian Britons colonize and christianize Brittany (alias Armorica) in the later France
- 420..... The heretic Pelagius, now living in Rome, abandons orthodox British Church which had repudiated him, and joins the Roman Church
- 421..... The British missionary Pallad evangelizes in Ireland, before later embracing the new religion of Romanism
- 422..... Irish Christians Sodal(ius) and Celest(ius) oppose Pelagianism, before Celest apostasizes into it
- 425f..... Iro-Scots in Western Scotland and the Picts in Northern Scotland cooperate together in joint enterprises
- 432..... Briton Patrick converts many Irish to Christianity (including their kings & many druids) and codifies their laws
- 435..... Europe's Bishop Theodoret: `Paul brought salvation to the Isles\_; `preached\_ there; and `persuaded...the Britons\_
- 438..... Europe's Emperor Theodosius II publishes his :Christian-Roman~ Law Code for his Roman Empire
- 439..... Celtic Christian Garman leads the hymn-singing Britons in their :Hallelujah~ victory against the invading Pagans
- 440..... Anglo-Saxon politics: `Representative Government by Elders\_ in Germany (ever since at least the 98 A.D. Tacitus)
- 445..... Briton Vortigern imports the Angles and the Saxons to help defend Southern Britain against the Pagan Picts
- 448f..... Garman (and his disciple Illtud) preach in Britain to the Pagan Saxons
- 450..... Brythonic missionaries Keby and Peiran and Fastid(ius) from Celtic Cornwall evangelize and resist the Pagan Saxons
- 451f..... The Council of Chalcedon in the East, and the Sack of Rome in the West (by the Vandals)

COMMON LAW: ROOTS AND FRUITS

- 455 ..... The Briton Maelgwyn of Llandaff says Joseph of Arimathea died in Somerset's Avalon or Ynys Witrin (Glastonbury)
- 460 ..... The Briton Illtud in Wales teaches his famous British disciples Dewi, Gildas, Samson of Dol and Pol of Leon
- 465 ..... The Briton Cadoc founds College of Llan-Carvan, and refers to work in Britain previously done by the A.D. 56 Hebrew Christian Ilid
- 475 ..... Dewi (St. David), Maelgwyn's nephew, builds Glastonbury cathedral over the original church of Joseph of Arimathea
- 480f..... Embres Erryll (Ambrose Aurelianus), Constantinus's grandson, resists Anglo-Saxons & rules the British Cotswolds
- 500f..... Bridget's Iro-Scots take Christianity to 'New Dalriada' (alias Western Scotland)
- 514 ..... Cumbrian Kentigern (alias Mungo), a disciple of Servan, becomes a Brythonic Culdee Christian missionary to Caledonia
- 516 ..... The Christian King Arthur Pendragon, nephew of St. David, is the very last Brythonic king to defeat the Pagan Saxons
- 525 ..... All Ireland is christianized by now, also through Padrick's successors Finian and Comgall
- 528 ..... Christian Roman Emperor Justinian I in the East, further christianizes Roman Law (producing the *Codex Justinianus*)
- 540 ..... Embres II (Ambrose Telesina), the British Presbyter, condemns the 'Romish wolves' only then beginning to threaten the Britons' Church
- 545 ..... Christian Britons strong in the West Country, from Cornwall to Devon and from Cambrian Wales to Cumbrian Westmorland
- 546f..... North-Brythonic Picts christianized by the Iro-Scotic Columba and by the Cumbrian Mungo (alias Kentigern)
- 550f..... Emergence of the Saxons' legal systems (of Ono and Mercia) in Western 'Angle-land'
- 560f..... Irishman Brendan's voyages across the Atlantic to America, leaving traces of Christianity *inter alios* also among the Algonquin Amerindians
- 563f..... Irish Christian Calumcille (alias Columba) takes the Gospel to Iona in the Hebrides ('Hebrew-ides'?)
- 569f..... The Scot King Aidan is trained by St. Columba to be a Christian Ruler; and the first extant Brythonic church historian, Gildas, writes his *Ruin of Britain*

*CHRONOLOGICAL DEVELOPMENT OF  
COMMON LAW*

- 570f..... Columba visits Brude, King of the Picts, and converts him to Christianity
- 575..... Ulster: Council of Drumceat is attended by Irish King Aedh MacAinmore, by Aidan King of Dalriada, and by St. Columba of Iona
- 575f..... Rise of papacy in Italy: Roman Bishop Gregory posthumously proclaimed first sole `Pope\_ alias `Universal Father` of Christianity here on Earth
- 577..... Battle of Deorham: Saxons defeat Britons, separating Cambrian West-Welsh (in Wales) and the `North-Welsh` Cumbrians from the South-Welsh (in Devon & Cornwall)
- 580..... Wales: Moderator Dionoth presides over thousands of Anti-Romish Celtic Christians, headquartered at Bangor
- 588..... From Europe, the Anti-Romish missionary St. Columbanus visits his Fellow-Irishman Columba in Iona
- 595..... Ireland: Christians attacked by the marauding Pagan Vikings from Scandinavia
- 596..... First `Pope\_ sends the Romish Au(gu)stin from Italy ` to romanize the Anglo-Jutish Pagans in Kent
- 598f..... Synod of the Celto-Brythonic Church tells Austin it repudiates the Bishop of Rome and his new `papacy\_
- 600..... Jerusalem: Venantius says apostle Paul evangelized `the Britons\_ and *Ultima Thule* (apparently meaning Britain) and thus founding the British Church
- 601f..... The Celto-British Church Council at the Synod of Chester condemns all the `haughty...Romans\_ (meaning the Romish Missionaries just come to England)
- 606f..... The Scots-Irish Church opposes Roman Catholicism in Britain
- 607..... At Austin's Oak, the British Churches tell Austin: `We know of none that...you term Pope!\_
- 610f..... Wales: Moderator Dionoth and Prince Cadvan tell Austin that they repudiate Rome and her new papacy
- 613..... Chester: Pagan Saxon Northumbrians defeat Britons, thus crucially separating the North-Welsh (alias the Cumbrians) from the West-Welsh (the Cambrians)
- 615f..... First Christian Laws of Kent's Anglo-Jutish King Ethelbeht and his (Roman Catholic) Frankish spouse, Queen Bertha

*COMMON LAW: ROOTS AND FRUITS*

- 616.....Oswald, Saxon King of Northumbria, embraces Celtic Christianity from the Culdee Celtic missionary Aidan of Iona
- 618..... `Not Austin but Aidan is the true apostle of England\_ (J.B. Lightfoot)
- 620..... The Celtic churchman Aidan in Britain was full of the `Scriptures\_ and of `Psalms\_ - said the 700f A.D. Bede
- 620f..... Pictavia, in Northeastern Scotland, under King Nechtan begins to lapse from Culdee Christianity into Romanism
- 622f..... Dramatic rise of Mohammed and spread of Islam - in God's judgment against a corrupt Mediterranean Church
- 625 ..... Austin's Romish successor Laurentius complains that the Anti-Romish `Scotch bishops are worse even than the British!\_
- 635 ..... Oswald becomes King of Bernicia in Northumberland, and the Celtic Culdee missionary Aidan goes to Lindisfarne
- 640 ..... Islam is promoted, unwittingly, by Romanism's suppression of the vernacular Bible and by her increasing use of images
- 650 ..... British Churches appeal to Scripture alone, and to the `Non-Roman\_ canon 11 of the A.D. 381 Council of Constantinople
- 660 ..... England: current church planters among the Anglo-Saxons are not Romanists but Briton-trained Culdee Christians
- 661 ..... Anti-Romish Celtic missionary Finan dies - after baptizing the King of the East Saxons and the King of the Mercians
- 664 ..... British Synod of Whitby co-ordinates Celtic and Saxon Churches (but alas on a Non-Celtic and a romanizing basis)
- 665 ..... Plague (possibly typhus or smallpox) breaks out in England - as God's curse upon the religious compromise at Whitby? - and carries off many people
- 666 ..... Brythons stay unromanized; the English romanized only in Kent; but Western Europe kisses the Pope's toe (*cf.* Rev. 13:11-18)
- 667 ..... The Culdee Chad, Bishop of Northumbria, appoints the Bishop of the English Saxons in Mercia
- 670 ..... The Romanizers start pushing the anti-papal Britons back - yet they never eclipse their :Proto-Protestant's Church
- 675 ..... The Briton King Cadwallader protects all Christians fleeing from those Saxons who were still Pagans (thus the *Welsh Triads*)

*CHRONOLOGICAL DEVELOPMENT OF  
COMMON LAW*

- 675f.....Even in the slowly-romanizing English Church, the papal claims are resisted )
- 680.....British missionaries Willibrord and Boniface and Ansar win many Germans, Western Europeans and Scandinavians for Christ
- 688.....Wessex King Ina (Ivor): Glastonbury `is the city...and origin of Christ's religion in Britain\_ from 60f A.D. onward
- 688f.....Ina enacts Christian laws ` and raises a large church in Glastonbury over Aristobulus's grave (*Welsh Triads' Iolo MS*)
- 690.....No kingdoms in the British Isles are still prevailingly heathen; even :Angle-land` is now Christian (thus Sir Winston Churchill)
- 700f.....England: even the Romish church historian Bede admits Celtic Britain was christianized pre-Romishly in 156f A.D. under the British King Llew
- 700f.....The Celtic `Britons\_ received Christianity in 156 A.D., and `are...enemies to the Roman...Mass\_ (thus the Romish Anglo-Saxon Bede)
- 705.....West-Saxon Romish Synod of Aldhelm says Celtic Britons are `outside of the Catholic Church\_ of Rome
- 720.....Founding of Christian-Pictish University of St. Andrews, just north of what was Northumbria (in what is now Scotland)
- 720f.....Offa, the Christian-Saxon King of Mercia, erects `Offa's Dyke\_ as a defence boundary against the Non-Saxons peoples then in Britain
- 793.....The Pagan Norsemen invade Northumbria and slaughter the Christians on the Isle of Lindisfarne
- 794.....Iona and many other Christian islands in Scotland and Ireland are plundered by the Pagan Vikings from Scandinavia
- 800.....English Christian Alcuin trains the Frankish Charlemagne who enacts Romish-Christian Laws
- 803.....Ninian's Christian Whithorn in Scotland now attacked by the Pagan Vikings
- 814.....Charlemagne unites Western Europe ` excluding Britain! ` as the `Holy Roman Empire\_ under Romish rule
- 825.....Iceland evangelized not by Romanists but by Celtic Proto-Protestant Culdee missionaries from Ireland
- 826.....Brythonic church historian Nenni(us) very active in Southeastern Wales

*COMMON LAW: ROOTS AND FRUITS*

- 830f..... America: Irish missionaries from Iceland reputed to have reached Canada and New England
- 850..... Wales: 510f B.C. Laws of Moelmud, well preserved, soon to be translated for the Christian Anglo-Saxon King Alfred of Wessex
- 860..... Scandinavians invade Celtic Christian Iceland (and themselves encounter Non-Roman Irish Christianity there)
- 880..... Christian-Saxon `Good King Alfred\_ codifies the Mosaic Law and Moelmud's Laws as the `Common Law\_ in his `Dooms`
- 890..... Alfred wins the Pagan Dane Guthrum for Christianity, becomes his godfather, and then signs an international Christian Peace Treaty with him
- 900f..... The Anglo-British Christian-Saxon Laws of King Ethelred (alias Anglo-British Common Law)
- 925..... Christian King Athelstan consolidates the Anglo-Saxons, and makes a treaty with five Brythonic kings
- 930f..... British Christian laws of the Welsh king Hywel Dda the Good, allied to King Athelstan of England, updates the B.C. 510f laws of Moelmud
- 950f..... Romish Ecclesiastical Canon Law received in Europe - but resisted both in Celtic Britain and in Anglic Britain
- 960f..... Saxon King Edgar: Glastonbury is `the first church in the kingdom\_ and was `built by the disciples\_ known to Jesus
- 965f..... English King Edgar resists the papal legate Dunstan's claims - that the Pope should control Britain
- 970..... Iceland: the whole nation votes in its Parliament to accept Christianity as the national religion
- 985..... Greenland discovered and settled by Christian Icelanders
- 1000..... Markland and Vinland in North America visited (and settled?) by Christian Icelanders
- 1014..... King Knut (alias Canute), the godly Anglo-Dane, centralizes Christian Law in Anglo-British England
- 1034..... The Britons of Strathclyde unite with the Scots and the Picts under their King Duncan as the first king of `United Scotland`
- 1042..... Edward the Confessor, a godly Christian, becomes the last Saxon King of an Anglo-British England

*CHRONOLOGICAL DEVELOPMENT OF  
COMMON LAW*

- 1050.....First traces of the English jury system (which some think was based upon the twelve patriarchs or the twelve apostles)
- 1066.....King William the Conqueror invades England; yet Nor(se)men from France resist the pope, and gradually get anglicized
- 1067.....Many Anglo-Britons flee from the Normans in England - and re-settle in Wales and Ireland
- 1068.....Queen Margaret romanizes the Scottish Church, in spite of all Culdee (alias Proto-Protestant) resistance
- 1085.....Pope Hildebrand (Gregory VII): `I am Emperor\_ - but not of Anglo-Norman Britain!
- 1088.....King William's `Doomsday Book\_ leaves Glastonbury's Ancient Church quite untaxed (as Britain's `Mother Church\_)
- 1100.....First Christian Crusade, also from England, in Palestine
- 1100f.....The Scottish Culdees resist the steady ongoing romanization of the Caledonian Church
- 1142f.....William of Malmesbury writes about the previous kings of Anglo-Saxon and Anglo-British Christian England
- 1145.....Ireland: Malachy enforces mandatory celibacy on the Irish presbyters, and thus helps to finalize their romanization
- 1152.....Geoffrey Arthur of Monmouth, Deacon of Llandaff, writes a Welsh history - from B.C. 1100 to the A.D. 675 Cadwallader
- 1164.....King Henry II's *Constitutions of Clarendon* curb ecclesiastical powers within England
- 1170.....The papist Thomas à Becket is punished by the crown for breaking his assent to the *Constitutions of Clarendon*
- 1175.....Prince Madoc, a Christian Welshman, takes three hundred men to settle in North America
- 1176.....English Chief Justice Glanvill limits the scope of Romish Canon Law
- 1215.....*Magna Carta*: protects the qualified franchise and Parliament-under-law against the centralized tyranny of both the king and the pope
- 1250.....Bracton's *Laws and Customs of England*: `the king ought to be under...God and the law\_ (Deut. 17:18f)
- 1260.....Europe: Thomas Aquinas's Romish `Natural Law\_ theory (= largely formulated from Aristotle)

COMMON LAW: ROOTS AND FRUITS

- 1292 ..... Breton's *Summary of the Laws of England* helps anglicize the Normans
- 1300 ..... Edward I, 'the English Justinian' (thus Sir William Blackstone),  
bridles the Pope and unifies English Law
- 1315 ..... Scotland: Robert the Bruce, together with the Irish, asserts liberty (even  
when papally excommunicated)
- 1320f ..... Pseudo-Dexter, Haleca, Freculphus & Forcatulus: Joseph of Arimathea  
was in Britain from 38 A.D. onward
- 1325 ..... Marsilia of Padua: defends civil power *versus* the papacy (even in  
Europe!)
- 1330f ..... The Great Plague (bubonic Black Death) exterminates two-thirds of  
corrupt religionists throughout the then-known World
- 1345 ..... Edward III promotes industry; respects popular rights; and withstands  
the Pope (on the advice of the English Parliament)
- 1345f ..... William of Ockham advocates separation between Church and State -  
thus foreshadowing Luther
- 1351 ..... English *Statute of Provisors*: benefices in Britain forbidden to all the  
foreign clergy there
- 1353 ..... English *Statute of Praemunire*: appeals from Britain to Rome  
henceforth to be prohibited
- 1360f ..... Cumbria: Wycliffe asserts primacy of Scripture and pre-eminence of  
Laws of God and of England *versus* Rome's Pope
- 1380 ..... Wycliffe's Lollards: 'You could not meet two men on the road, but one  
was a Wycliffite!' - Not just in England, but also in Scotland
- 1405 ..... Bohemia: The godly Bohemian Queen of England, a follower of  
Wycliffite, in Bohemia supports John Huss's reforms which influenced  
Luther a century later
- 1409f ..... *Reform Councils*: 'The British Church was founded by Joseph of  
Arimathea\_ from Palestine, and not from Rome
- 1470 ..... Fortescue's *Praises of the Laws of England* say British Law started  
with the Trojan Brut in B.C. 1150
- 1481 ..... Littleton's *Treatise on Tenures* (on the Non-Roman British Law of  
Property)
- 1485 ..... The Welsh Tudor King becomes Henry VII of England, thus  
anticipating the 1536 Union between England and Wales



*CHRONOLOGICAL DEVELOPMENT OF  
COMMON LAW*

- 1515f.....Fitzherbert's *Grand Abridgment* (or digest of important legal cases in Britain)
- 1517f.....Protestant Reformation produces Luther's antipapal writings *To the German Nation* and his *Secular Authority*
- 1521 .....Zwingli's *Declaration of Christian Faith* limits the papacy and much elevates the magistrates
- 1529f.....British Parliament removes papal Canon Law from England, punishing capital crimes only under the Common Law
- 1534 .....Even the French Romanist Polydor Vergil says Britain received Christianity already in the first century
- 1536 .....*Act of Union* between England and Wales (as 'Great Britain') - consummated under Britain's 'Welsh Tudor King' Henry VIII
- 1536f.....Geneva: Calvin's *Institutes* (IV) and his *Commentaries* promote even political liberty and law and order
- 1550 .....Edward VI steers England toward Calvinism and incipient Puritanism
- 1555 .....Even Romish Cardinal Pole: 'Britain was the first of all countries to receive the Christian faith!'
- 1558f.....Elizabeth I of England - 'Good Queen Bess' - considerably promotes the Protestant Reformation
- 1559 .....Scottish Queen Mary abdicates for her son James VI; Knox returns from John Calvin in Switzerland, and protestantizes Scotland
- 1559f.....Various Reformed Confessions (French, Belgic, Scots, Swiss *etc.*) discuss the duties of the civil magistrates.
- 1560 .....The *Geneva Bible* of Knox and Whittingham (= Mrs. John Calvin's brother-in-law) saturates England
- 1562 .....North America: French Protestants (Calvinists called 'Huguenots') temporarily colonize the Carolinas
- 1564f.....Rise of Calvinistic Puritanism in Elizabethan England of the Protestant 'Good Queen Bess'
- 1565 .....America: French Calvinists colonize St. Augustine in Florida
- 1570 .....Cardinal Baronius, the Vatican's Librarian, concedes that Christianity reached Britain by A.D. 35
- 1573 .....Beza's *Rights of Rulers* (through the 1579 *Vindication Against Tyrants*) later influences even George Washington

COMMON LAW: ROOTS AND FRUITS

- 1583 ..... Scottish King James VI's `Protestant League\_ between Scotland and England
- 1584f..... Protestant British explorations of North American coast by Raleigh, Hakluyt, Cabot, *etc.*
- 1588 ..... Protestant Britain decisively defeats the Romanists' naval `Armada\_ from Spain and Portugal and Italy
- 1603 ..... Scottish James VI becomes also James I of England - and unsuccessfully tries to fuse those two kingdoms
- 1603f..... James creates `Greater Union\_ flag: combining England's St. George's cross with Scotland's St. Andrew's cross
- 1606 ..... Jansz enters Australia's Gulf of Carpentaria in ship *Duyfken*, and follows the coast to Cape Keer-Weer in Queensland
- 1607 ..... Quiros discovers New Hebrides (and Australia?) - which he names :Land of the Holy Spirit`
- 1610 ..... The Calvinistic jurist Althusius posits :sphere-sovereignty` vs. statism - and influences Robinson's `Pilgrim Fathers\_ who would colonize America
- 1611 ..... James I of England (= James VI of Scotland) approves the *Authorised Version* of the Bible for use in the churches of his two realms
- 1611f..... The *Dedication* to King James in the *Authorised Version* of the Bible calls Britain `our Zion\_ and teaches against `man of sin\_ and other `popish persons\_
- 1616 ..... Dirck Hartog, in his ship *Eendracht*, discovers the West Coast of Australia
- 1620 ..... America: British Protestant migrants' *Mayflower Compact* = Pilgrims' covenant rule in, and for, this World (under God)
- 1622 ..... The good ship *Tryal* wrecked with some survivors (as the first Britons known to have reached the Monte Bello islands off the coast of Western Australia)
- 1628 ..... England: *Petition of Right* cites also *Magna Carta* of A.D. 1215, against the absolutism of King Charles I
- 1628 ..... America: the Puritan John Endicott appointed to supervise eight settlements in Salem (Massachusetts)
- 1628f..... England: Christian Lord Chief Justice Sir Edward Coke's *Institutes and Origin of the Common Law of England*

*CHRONOLOGICAL DEVELOPMENT OF  
COMMON LAW*

- 1629 ..... Puritan Higginson: `Farewell, dear England.... We separate from corruption and go to New England!\_
- 1629 ..... John Winthrop (later Governor of New England) makes his great Genesis 1:26 `Resolve` (while still in England)
- 1630 ..... Winthrop brings a *Charter of Christian Government* for Massachusetts, with catechists, on the good ship *Arbella*
- 1633 ..... British Puritan John Cotton goes to America, writing *Moses and his Judicials* after Cotton says he had been `sweetened` with Calvin
- 1633f..... American `Puritans believed...the pure church should be not only national\_ but also `Presbyterian and indeed on Calvin`s model\_ (so Perry Miller)
- 1639f..... British battles: Scottish Revolt; and First and Second English Civil Wars
- 1642 ..... British Civil War: the Puritan Cromwell`s `Ironsides` subjugate the land to Biblical rule
- 1642 ..... The Dutch Reformed Christian Tasman dedicates his voyage (to Australasia) to God Almighty, and reaches Tasman-ia
- 1643 ..... New England Confederation (between Massachusetts and Connecticut) - Calvinistic `sphere-sovereignty`!
- 1643f..... Puritans: draw up Westminster Standards (23:1f & 25:6 & 31:2f) on the civil magistrate (and against papacy) *etc.*
- 1644 ..... Presbyterian Rutherford`s *Lex Rex* (= `Law is King!`) - *versus* High-Anglican *Rex Lex* (= `The King is the Law!`)
- 1646f..... Massachusetts`s Cambridge Synod confederates - and then adopts the British *Westminster Standards*
- 1649 ..... Puritan British Member of Parliament John Sadler advocates `Anglo-Israelism`
- 1652 ..... South Africa: Calvinistic Governor Jan van Riebeeck`s prayer, establishing the Reformed Religion at the Cape of Good Hope
- 1653 ..... The Calvinistic Oliver Cromwell is appointed Lord Protector of all Britain
- 1657 ..... Cromwell champions religious liberty - and refuses the offered kingship over Britain
- 1658 ..... Death of Oliver Cromwell - yet deathless Puritanism still continues!
- 1659 ..... The American Puritan John Eliot - on the `Christian Commonwealth`

COMMON LAW: ROOTS AND FRUITS

- 1660.....Restoration of the English Monarchy – on a constitutional basis (under King Charles II)
- 1671f.....Lord Chief Justice Hales, a *Westminster Confession* Puritan, produces his own *History of the Common Law of England*
- 1679.....Titus Oates’s ‘Popish Plot’; Jenkes’s case; and the *Habeas Corpus Act*
- 1689.....Romanizing English King James II deposed in the ‘Glorious Revolution’; all British monarchs henceforth required to maintain God’s Law protestantly
- 1689f.....Reign of the Protestants King William and Queen Mary; and adoption of the *Declaration of Rights* alias the *British Bill of Rights*
- 1690.....Ireland: William of Orange defeats James II at Battle of the Boyne – securing Ulster for Protestantism
- 1700.....John Locke: the chief end of government is to preserve property under God’s ‘Law of Nature’
- 1707.....Union between South Britain (= England-Wales) and Scotland, as the British ‘United Kingdom’ (a Constitutional Monarchy)
- 1710.....Ireland: massive Scots-Irish Protestant exodus from Ulster, and especially to North America
- 1711.....Rev. Dr. Cotton Mather: America is yet to fulfil the glorious predictions of Scripture!
- 1734.....France: Montesquieu’s conservative *Considerations of the Causes of the Grandeur of the Romans and of their Decadence*
- 1739.....Rev. Dr. Jonathan Edwards: America and Australia and the whole World are yet to be filled with the glory of God!
- 1748.....France: Montesquieu’s conservative *Spirit of Laws* (praising Locke’s Britain and Colonial America)
- 1765.....Blackstone’s *Commentaries on the Laws of England* upholds Common Law and Christianity for Britain and her colonies
- 1765f.....Francis Lightfoot Lee of Virginia signs America’s *Westmoreland Declaration* against the *British Stamp Act*
- 1770f.....The anti-radical Irish Statesman Edmund Burke defends the actions of the exasperated North American Colonists
- 1770.....Cook discovers the East Coast of Australia, and sails through the Torres Strait

*CHRONOLOGICAL DEVELOPMENT OF  
COMMON LAW*

- 1771 ..... First edition of *Encyclopaedia Britannica* asserts the Common Law capital punishments: for murder; rape; and blasphemy
- 1776 ..... Princeton's Presbyterian Rev. Dr. John Witherspoon, signer of *Declaration of Independence*, says Moses's *lex talionis* is needed in American government
- 1776 ..... June 7: Richard Henry Lee moves that the American Colonies confederate together and break political ties with England
- 1776 ..... June 12: *Virginia Bill of Rights* (to serve as a later model for all of the many American Colonies)
- 1776 ..... July 4: *American Declaration of Independence*: `all men are endowed by their Creator\_ with certain `unalienable rights\_`
- 1777 ..... First prayer in American Congress petitions God in the name of Jesus Christ for victory during the War for Independence
- 1777f..... English Captain James Cook visits Tasmania and New Zealand - and is later killed in the Hawaiian islands
- 1783 ..... Peace Treaty of Paris (between England and the U.S.A.): `in the Name of the most Holy and undivided Trinity\_`
- 1786 ..... Evangelical Rev. Richard Johns[t]on offered the Chaplaincy of New South Wales, and takes Bibles and Psalters to Australia
- 1787 ..... U.S. *Northwest Ordinance*: `religion [and] morality...[are] necessary to good government\_`
- 1787 ..... (Christian) *Constitution of the U.S.A.* `in the year of our Lord 1787\_` with `Sundays\_` not to be working-days
- 1788 ..... First Fleet arrives at Botany Bay establishing first British Colony in Australia; Governor Phillip enforces the Decalogue in public life
- 1789 ..... Anti-Trinitarian French Revolution, the worst calamity since the fall of man, starts dechristianizing the West increasingly
- 1790 ..... Irishman Edmund Burke's *Reflections on the Revolution in France* solidly condemns the 1789 French Revolution
- 1791 ..... 1st Amendment: `Congress shall make no law respecting an establishment of religion or prohibiting the free exercise\_`
- 1791 ..... 7th Amendment: right to trial by jury in any U.S. court only `according to rules of the common law\_`
- 1791 ..... U.S. *Bill of Rights* (= first ten Amendments) praised by the Irish Christian Burke (and later also by the English Prime Minister Lord Gladstone)

*COMMON LAW: ROOTS AND FRUITS*

- 1792..... Australia: commencement of Christian education (Gov. Phillip and Revs. Johnson & Marsden)
- 1792f..... Nearly all of the first U.S. Presidents and Statesmen had overwhelmingly Biblical views
- 1795 ..... Australia: Gov. Hunter looks to Providence for support, and speaks of Christ as his Saviour
- 1801 ..... Creation of the United Kingdom of Great Britain and Ireland under the present British flag (the :Union Jack ~)
- 1802f..... Europe (and later even America) increasingly infected by the unholy aftermath of the 1789 atheistic French Revolution
- 1804 ..... The Lieutenant-Governor authorizes the settlement of Tasmania to start with public prayer (led by Rev. Knopwood)
- 1810 ..... Australia: Governor Macquarie promotes Christian dayschools and chaplains, and promotes Bible Society & Sunday Schools
- 1821 ..... Australia: Christian Governor Thomas Brisbane's motto: `Never despair; aspire to God! \_
- 1829 ..... England: *Roman Catholic Relief Act* requires all Romanists elected to British Parliament not to disturb British Protestantism
- 1830 ..... Increasing political and religious and social influence of Rev. John Dunmore Lang, Australian Presbyterian Minister and Statesman
- 1832 ..... England: *Reform Bill* too sudden - begins phasing revolutionary principles into Britain
- 1848 ..... Thwarted European communist revolutionists go underground, some migrating to U.S.A.
- 1848f..... Northern U.S. infiltrated by `excrement\_ from leftist `sewer\_ of Europe (thus Dabney), some becoming Yankee generals
- 1850f..... Leftist migrants, to Northern U.S., promote hatred of Christian Common Law especially south of the Mason-Dixon line
- 1855f..... Unitarian Yankee radicals agitate for the destruction of Trinitarian Christian Southland
- 1859 ..... Presbyterian U.S. Southerner Thornwell urges all Christians to `undertake the conquest of the world\_ with the Gospel
- 1861 ..... Thornwell unsuccessfully urges Southern Confederacy to give constitutional recognition to `Christ as King of kings \_

*CHRONOLOGICAL DEVELOPMENT OF  
COMMON LAW*

- 1861f.....U.S.A.: Unitarian War of Northern Aggression defeats the Christian South; Fourteenth Amendment `enacted\_ unconstitutionally
- 1869 .....Ex-C.S.A. General Robert E. Lee: If the 1861f War had to be waged again, `I should act in precisely the same manner!\_
- 1871 .....France's `Paris Commune\_ - as World's first largely-communist government - legislates against Christianity
- 1874 .....Australia: the Law of God is part and parcel of the law of the land - thus *ex parte Thackeray* 13 S.C.R. (N.S.W.) 1,61
- 1892 .....U.S. Supreme Court still saying: `This is a Christian nation!\_ (*Church of the Holy Trinity v. United States*)
- 1901 .....Australian Constitution `relying on the blessing of Almighty God\_ with an oath to uphold the monarch `so help me God\_
- 1901 .....Adoption of Australian flag, uniting the three Christian crosses of England & Ireland & Scotland with the Southern Cross
- 1901 .....Presbyterian Church of Australia declares that also fallen man `is responsible for compliance with the Moral Law\_
- 1903f.....British Law Professor Holdsworth: `Christianity is parcel of the Common Law of England, and therefore to be protected by it; now, whatever strikes at the very root of Christianity, tends manifestly to the dissolution of civil government.\_
- 1912 .....New Hampshire refuses to eliminate the word `Christian\_ from its *Bill of Rights* (until 1926)
- 1917 .....Surname of British Royal House changed to Windsor (an anglicization of the name of Queen Victoria's Prince Consort).
- 1917 .....Russian Revolution was the product of the French Revolution of 1789 and of the communist revolutions of 1848 & 1871 (thus Lenin)
- 1944 .....:United Nations~ manipulated by leftists - with most International Treaties progressively assailing Christian Common Law
- 1953 .....Commonwealth: Queen Elizabeth II, in a ceremony hardly changed since Pre-Norman Aglo-Saxon times, given a Bible at her coronation and told: `Our gracious Queen, we present you with this Book, the most valuable thing that this world affords.... This is the Royal Law (James 2:8-12).\_ Then follows the famous coronation prayer: `Almighty and ever-living God..., grant that...Thy servant Elizabeth our Queen...may truly...administer justice, to the punishment of wickedness and vice, and to the maintenance of Thy true religion and virtue. Through Jesus Christ our Lord. Amen!\_

COMMON LAW: ROOTS AND FRUITS

- 1954.....U.S. Congress legislates to add words `under God\_ after words `one nation\_ in the pledge of allegiance to the American flag
- 1977f.....Presbyterian Church of Australia starts re-asserting the infallibility of the Holy Bible and the authority of the *Westminster Confession of Faith*
- 1980 ..... Australia. Presbyterian Church of Queensland affirms the `right to life \_ of `the unborn child...from conception \_
- 1982 ..... America: U.S. Congress calls the Bible `the Word of God\_; recognizes `the formative influence the Bible has been for our Nation\_; and urges `our national need to study and apply the teachings of the Holy Scriptures\_; as `this Nation now faces great challenges that will test this Nation as it has never been tested before.... Faith in God through Holy Scripture can strengthen us as a nation and a people. \_ Statement signed into law, by President Ronald Reagan.
- 1983 ..... R.D. Lumb's *Australian Constitutionalism* notes impact of *Magna Carta*, Blackstone, & *U.S. Constitution* on Australian Law
- 1983 ..... Queensland: Presbyterian Church declares `any unlawful human attempt to abort, is murder in the sight of God\_; and that `everything medically possible \_ is to `be done to try to ensure the continuation of the lives of all that are thus being threatened. \_
- 1988 ..... Britain's Prime Minister Margaret Thatcher informs the General Assembly of the Presbyterian Church of Scotland about her own `personal belief in the relevance of Christianity to public policy.... The Old Testament lays down: in Exodus the Ten Commandments as given to Moses; the injunction in Leviticus to love our neighbour as ourselves; and generally, the importance of observing a strict Code of Law.... The New Testament is a record of: the Incarnation; the teachings of Christ; and the establishment of the Kingdom of God.... I believe that by taking together these key elements from the Old and New Testaments, we gain a view of the universe; a proper attitude to work; and principles to shape economic and social life.... The Christian religion...is a fundamental part of our national heritage.... We are a nation whose ideals are founded on the Bible.... Nowhere in the Bible is the word `democracy' mentioned. Ideally, when Christians meet as Christians to take counsel together, their purpose is not to ascertain what is the mind of the majority but what is the mind of the Holy Spirit.... No majority can take away God-given human rights! \_
- 1990f..... Iron Curtain Communism crumbles, and former socialist states open up to the Gospel
- 1991 ..... Australia. Presbyterian Church of Queensland condemns gambling, sabbath desecration, prostitution and homosexuality ^ and requests the State to re-introduce the death penalty for murder



*CHRONOLOGICAL DEVELOPMENT OF  
COMMON LAW*

- 1992f..... Australia. Parliamentary debate. The three Christian crosses and the Southern Cross on the flag - stay there!
- 1993 ..... Queen Elizabeth II quotes John 1:10-12 in her Christmas Message, and then commends those who go about their lawful lives
- 1993f..... Ungodliness & 'AIDS' etc. increase; Islam and Romanism march again; Humanism and the 'New Age' movement advance. But so too does the Tri-une Christ-ian Gospel, into all the World. Matt. 28:19f - till Rev. 15:3-4!



# **MAPS OF MAJOR PLACES MENTIONED IN THE DISSERTATION**

Common Law from creation till the Flood

*COMMON LAW: ROOTS AND FRUITS*

Go ye into all the world..and subdue the earth!

*MAPS OF MAJOR PLACES MENTIONED  
IN THE DISSERTATION*

Common Law from Flood till Babel

The descendants of Japeth

*MAPS OF MAJOR PLACES MENTIONED  
IN THE DISSERTATION*

The Mosaic World +/- B.C. 1450 (Hebrews 11:24-26)

Celtiberian & Trojans migrations to British Isles (B.C. 1400 - 1185f)



*MAPS OF MAJOR PLACES MENTIONED  
IN THE DISSERTATION*

Pre-Israelitic Canaan (till B.C. 1400)

Tribal areas of Israel (B.C. 1200-1000)

*MAPS OF MAJOR PLACES MENTIONED  
IN THE DISSERTATION*

Empire of David & Solomon (B.C. 1000-925)

Kingdom of Israel and Judah (B.C. 925 - 842)

*MAPS OF MAJOR PLACES MENTIONED  
IN THE DISSERTATION*

The Assyrian Empire (B.C. 824 - 625)

Neo-Babylonian & Medo-Persian Empires (B.C. 625 - 335f)

*MAPS OF MAJOR PLACES MENTIONED  
IN THE DISSERTATION*

Hellenistic Empire (B.C. 334 - 170)

Ancient Ireland (B.C. & A.D.)



*MAPS OF MAJOR PLACES MENTIONED  
IN THE DISSERTATION*

Ancient British Isles (till B.C. 54)

The Pagan Roman Empire (B.C. 170-44)

*MAPS OF MAJOR PLACES MENTIONED  
IN THE DISSERTATION*

Palestine Between the two Testaments

Palestine in the time of Christ (A.D. 0-33)

*MAPS OF MAJOR PLACES MENTIONED  
IN THE DISSERTATION*

Spread of Christianity (A.D. 33 - 66f)

Free Britain in first century (Till A.D. 43f)

*MAPS OF MAJOR PLACES MENTIONED  
IN THE DISSERTATION*

Roman Britannia (A.D. 43 - 397)

Christianity in the first century A.D. ?



*MAPS OF MAJOR PLACES MENTIONED  
IN THE DISSERTATION*

Christianity in second Century **A.D.**

Christian Britain A.D. 200-300

*MAPS OF MAJOR PLACES MENTIONED  
IN THE DISSERTATION*

Constantine The Briton's Christian Empire (A.D. 300f)

The British Isles (A.D. 400-500)

*MAPS OF MAJOR PLACES MENTIONED  
IN THE DISSERTATION*

A.D. 450: Culdees expand as Rome Fragments

British Isles (A.D. 500-600)

*MAPS OF MAJOR PLACES MENTIONED  
IN THE DISSERTATION*

The Papal Neo-Roman Empire and the rise of Islam

Celto-Britain and the Anglo-Saxon heptarchy



*MAPS OF MAJOR PLACES MENTIONED  
IN THE DISSERTATION*

State of Christianity (A.D. 680-800)

Anglo-Danish Britain A.D. 800-1200

*MAPS OF MAJOR PLACES MENTIONED  
IN THE DISSERTATION*

Early Transatlantic Voyages

*COMMON LAW: ROOTS AND FRUITS*

A.D. 1861 - Common Law North America

*MAPS OF MAJOR PLACES MENTIONED  
IN THE DISSERTATION*

The Common Law Commonwealth of Australia